UNIVERSITY OF BELGRADE FACULTY OF PHYSICS

Danijel Obrić

# T-DUALIZATION OF BOSONIC STRING AND TYPE IIB SUPERSTRING IN PRESENCE OF COORDINATE DEPENDENT BACKGROUND FIELDS

Doctoral Dissertation

Belgrade, 2023.

UNIVERZITET U BEOGRADU FIZIČKI FAKULTET

Danijel Obrić

# T-DUALIZACIJA BOZONSKE STRUNE I TIP IIB SUPERSTRUNE U PRISUSTVU KOORDINATNO ZAVISNIH POZADINSKIH POLJA

Doktorska disertacija

Beograd, 2023.

# Supervisor:

• Prof. dr Bojan Nikolić, associate research professor, Institute of Physics, University of Belgrade

# Advisory Committee:

- Prof. dr Maja Burić full professor, Faculty of Physics, University of Belgrade
- Prof. dr Branislav Cvetković, full research professor, Institute of Physics, University of Belgrade
- Prof. dr Voja Radovanović, full professor, Faculty of Physics, University of Belgrade

**Defense date:** 18.09.2023

# Acknowledgment

While this PhD thesis is written by one author its existence would not be possible without assistance, both scientific and emotional, of small army of people. At the forefront of this group is my supervisor dr Bojan Nikolić who introduced me to the topics of string theory and non-commutativity. I would like to thank him for all the support he has provided over the years, for all discussions we had and lastly for understanding and patience he showed.

I would also like to give thanks to all professors from both Faculty of physics and Institute of physics who, during my schooling, were instrumental in shaping of my understanding of physical phenomena. It is sufficient to say that without them, this whole project would be terminated at first equation.

Lastly, but not the least, I would like to thank my family for their emotional support and for always pushing me in direction of completion of this thesis.

This research was supported by the Science Fund of the Republic of Serbia, grant 7745968, "Quantum Gravity from Higher Gauge Theory 2021" — QGHG-2021. The contents of this publication are the sole responsibility of the authors and can in no way be taken to reflect the views of the Science Fund of the Republic of Serbia.



# T-dualization of bosonic string and type IIB superstring in presence of coordinate dependent background fields

### Abstract

Topic of this disertation is examination of non-commutative and non-associative properties that emerge in context of closed string theory. This examination will be carried out on two distinct models. One where we work with bosonic string and other where we work with type IIB superstring. Furthermore, both of these models will be analyzed in presence of coordinate dependent background fields. Subjecting these models to T-dualization we will be able to obtain both T-dual theories and transformation laws that connect coordinates of starting theory with T-dual one. Utilizing transformation laws and commutative relations of starting theory we will be able to deduce non-commutative properties of T-dual theories. Method for obtaining T-duality will be based on Buscher procedure and its extensions. Main idea of Buscher procedure lies in localization of translational symmetry by replacing partial derivatives and coordinates that appear in action with covariant derivatives and invariant coordinates. This substitution inevitably introduces additional degrees of freedom which are encoded in gauge fields. By elimination of newly introduced degrees of freedom with method of Lagrange multipliers and subsequently finding equations of motion for gauge fields we obtain transformation laws. Inserting these laws into the action we will obtain T-dual theory.

In examination of bosonic string theory, we will work with 3D space where Kalb-Ramond background field will have infinitesimal linear dependence on one coordinate, z coordinate. Dualization will be carried along two distinct chains, one where coordinate that appears in background fields will be dualized last and other where it will be dualized first. By comparing these two approaches we will be able do discern what are necessary components for emergence of non-commutative properties.

Second part of thesis will be concerned with T-duality of type II superstring that propagates in linearly coordinate dependent Ramond-Ramond field. Unlike previous case, this theory possesses both bosonic and fermionic coordinates, however background field will only depend on bosonic part. T-duality will first focus only on bosonic part and later we will also incorporate fermionic part. We will also present alternative chain of duality where first we dualize fermionic coordinates and later bosonic ones. It will be shown that both chains produce same non-commutative relations. Finally, at the end of the thesis, we will also make analysis of same case when we have more general Ramond-Ramond field.

Key words: String theory, non-commutativity, non-associativity, Buscher procedureScientific area: PhysicsScientific subfield: High energy theoretical physics

# T-dualizacija bozonske strune i tip IIB superstrune u prisustvu koorinatno zavisnih pozadinskih polja

# Sažetak

Tema ove disertacije je bazirana na izučavanju nekomutativnih i neasocijativnih osobina koje se javljaju u kontekstu teorije struna. Ovo izučavanje će biti obavljeno na dva različita modela. Prvi model sa kojim ćemo raditi je model bozonske strune dok je drugi model za tip IIB superstrunu. Oba modela će biti analizirana u prisustvu koordinatno zavisnih pozadinskih polja. Podvrgavanjem ovih modela T-dualizaciji bićemo u stanju da dobijemo T-dualne teorije i zakone transfromacija koji povezuju koordinate početnih i T-dualnih teorija. Korišćenjem datih zakona transformacije, kao i komutativnih osobina početnih teorija bićemo u stanju da dedukujemo nekomutativne osobine T-dualnih teorija. Metoda za dobijanje T-dualnosti je bazirana na Bušerovoj proceduri i njenom upoštenju. Glavna ideja Bušerove procedure leži u lokalizaciji translacione simetrije, gde mi zamenjujemo parcijalne izvode i koordinate koje se javljaju u dejstvu sa kovarijantnim izvodima i invarijantnim koordinatama. Ova smena sa sobom povlači i uvođenje dodatnih stepeni slobode koji su izraženi preko kalibracionih polja. Eliminacijom novih stepeni slobode preko metode Lagranževih množitelja a zatim pronalaženjem jednačina kretanja za kalibraciona polja, dobijamo zakone transformacija između koordinata. Ubacivanjem ovih zakona transformacija u dejstvo dobijamo T-dualnu teoriju.

Proučavanje bozonske teorije struna, radićemo sa 3D prostorom gde uzimamo da Kalb-Ramondovo pozadinsko polje ima infinitezimalu linearnu koordinatnu zavisnost od samo jedne koordinate, z koordinate. Dualizacija će biti sprovedena duž dva različita lanca, jedan gde tek na kraju dualizujemo duž koordinate koja se javlja u pozadinskom polju a druge gde ovu koordinatu prvu dualizujemo. Poređenjem ova dva pristupa bićemo u stanju da zaključimo koji su sastojci neophodni za javljanje nekomutativnih osobina.

Drugi deo disertacije tiče se T-dualizacije tip II superstrune koja se kreće u linearno koordinatno zavisnom Ramon-Ramon polju. Za razliku od plošlog slučaja, ova teorija poseduje i bozonske i fermionske koordinate, doduše pozadinska polja zavise samo od bozonskih koordinata. T-dualizacija će se prvo fokusirati samo na bozonski deo, nakon toga ćemo uključiti i fermionske koordinate. Kao i u prošlom slučaju, predstavićemo i jos jedan alternativan lanac dualizacije, lanac gde prvo dualizujemo fermionske a zatim bozonske koordinate. Pokazaćemo da oba lanca vode do istih nekomutativnih relacija. Konačno, na kraju disertacije, izvršićemo analizu iste teorije ali sa opštijim slučajem Ramon-Ramon polja.

Ključne reči: Teroija struna, nekomutativnost, neasocijativnost, Bušerova procedura Naučna oblast: Fizika

Uža naučna oblast: Teorijska fizika visokih energija

# Contents

1	Intr	roduction	1			
<b>2</b>	Stri	ing theory	4			
	2.1	Bosonic string theory in coordinate dependent background fields	4			
		2.1.1 Relativistic point particle	4			
		2.1.2 Bosonic string theory	6			
		2.1.3 Inclusion of background fields	7			
	2.2	Supersymmetric string theory	9			
		2.2.1 Supersymmetric point particle	9			
		2.2.2 Pure spinor formulation of supersymmetric point particle	11			
		2.2.3 Superstring	12			
	2.3	T-duality	16			
		2.3.1 Busher procedure	16			
3	T-d	luality of closed bosonic string with H-flux	18			
	3.1	Three torus with $H$ -flux - choice of background fields $\ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots$	19			
	3.2	T-dualization of bosonic closed string action	21			
		3.2.1 T-dualization along $x$ direction - from torus with $H$ -flux to twisted torus	22			
		3.2.2 From twisted torus to non-geometrical $Q$ -flux $\ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots$	24			
		3.2.3 From $Q$ to $R$ -flux - T-dualization along $z$ coordinate $\ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots$	25			
	3.3	Noncommutativity and nonassociativity using T-duality	28			
		3.3.1 Noncommutativity relations	28			
		3.3.2 Nonassociativity	29			
4	From	m H-flux to the family of three nonlocal R-flux theories	30			
	4.1	Preliminary action and background fields	30			
	4.2	Family of three $R$ -flux non-local theories $\ldots \ldots \ldots$	31			
		4.2.1 T-dualization along $z$ direction - shortcut to $R$ -flux $\ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots$	31			
		4.2.2 T-dualization along $y$ direction $\ldots \ldots \ldots$	33			
		4.2.3 T-dualization along $x$ direction $\ldots \ldots \ldots$	34			
	4.3	Quantum aspects of T-dualization in the weakly curved background	36			
5	Bosonic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-					
	field		40			
	5.1	General type II superstring action and choice of background fields				
		5.1.1 General form of the pure spinor type II superstring action	41			

		5.1.2 Choice of the background fields	42			
	5.2	T-dualization	44			
	5.3	T-dualization of T-dual theory	48			
	5.4	Non-commutative relations	49			
6	Fermionic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-					
	field	1	<b>52</b>			
	6.1	Type II superstring action and action dualized along bosonic coordinates $\ldots$ .	53			
		6.1.1 Type II superstring in pure spinor formulation	53			
		6.1.2 Bosonic T-dual action	53			
	6.2	Fermionic T-duality	54			
		6.2.1 Type II superstring - fermionic T-duality	55			
		6.2.2 Fermionic T-duality of bosonic T-dual theory	57			
		6.2.3 Bosonic T-duality of fermionic T-dual theory	59			
	6.3	Few notes on non-commutativity	60			
7	Bosonic T-duality of supersymmetric string with coordinate dependent RR					
	field	l - general case	62			
	7.1	Action and choice of background fields	62			
	7.2	T-dualization - general case	63			
		7.2.1 Implementation of the generalized T-dualization procedure	63			
		7.2.2 T-dualization of T-dual theory - general case	67			
	7.3	Non-commutative relations - general case	68			
8	Conclusion		71			
A	Ligł	nt-cone coordinates	81			
в	Pois	sson brackets	82			
$\mathbf{C}$	C Obtaining $\beta_{\mu}^{\pm}$ terms					
D	Obt	aining $N(\kappa^{\pm})$ terms	86			
		Properties of $N(\kappa^{\pm})$ terms	86			

# 1. Introduction

In the first half of the 20th century physics has been the subject of two massive developments. First of these developments was switch from deterministic description of nature to one that is probabilistic, giving rise to quantum mechanics. This change introduces many counterintuitive ideas into physics. Some of these changes are that energies of objects are no longer continuous, they are now discrete taking on only certain values. We have that objects are no longer described by their positions and momenta, they are now described with object called wave function in which every relevant quantity is encoded. Furthermore, even when position and momenta are obtained they no longer commute, making it impossible to measure both values to arbitrary high precision. Existence of wave function suggests that objects propagate as waves of probability until measured, then they collapse to one of available states that was allowed by the theory. Other development happened due to realization that speed of light is the same for all observers. This in turn forced us to reconsider nature of space and time itself. Now, passage of time or measurements of positions were no longer the same for different observers moving at different speeds. Such drastic change in our understanding of reality forced us to abandon concepts of space and time as separate entities but to consider them as one unified object, called space-time, and theory which described motion in it was named special relativity. This paradigm shift soon ushered in realization that our understanding of gravity is not compatible with space-time. Now, gravity should be understood, not as a force but as a curvature of four dimensional space-time. Theory that deals with these concepts is called general relativity.

These two developments marked the start of modern theoretical physics, however they themselves are not compatible. Work on incorporation of quantum mechanics and general relativity into one unifying framework started in second half of 20th century and it is still ongoing. It should be noted that some progress has been made, quantum mechanics has been meshed with special relativity resulting in quantum field theory. Theory where main objects are no longer point particles but fields of energy whose excitations should be considered as particles which we observe. Quantum field theory allowed us to construct standard model of particle physics which to this day is the most accurate model of subatomic world. This theory also allows us to examine how fields behave when we have fixed space-time curvature but theory that describes full dynamics between fields and curvature is only a distant dream. Main problem with joining of these two formalism lies in the fact that quantum mechanics is plagued with infinities when we deal with interacting particles. While these infinities can be removed for electrodynamics, weak and strong nuclear forces with process called renormalization, in case of gravity divergences are non removable. This forces us to be more creative if we ever wish to obtain theory of quantum gravity.

Even before advent of quantum field theory there were propositions on how to best deal with emergent divergences. One idea that was proposed was to impose non-commutativity between

#### 1. Introduction

coordinates, reminiscent of non-commutativity between coordinates and momenta. This would in turn mean that there is minimal possible length in nature and that we can not measure position of particle with infinite precision. When quantum field theory and renormalization were developed, this idea was mostly forgotten. It was not until publishing of paper [1] that non-commutativity came into consideration again. Usually, space time is treated as continuum but in the case when we have non-commutativity between coordinates it is possible to construct Lorentz invariant space-time. After this introduction, there were many attempts to formulate physics through non-commutative formalism and today, quantum field theory constructed on non-commutative space-time is one of possible extensions of standard model [2, 3]. Along with this approach there are other possible approaches to solving problem of quantum gravity, where two most dominant theories are string theory and loop quantum gravity. Since topic of this thesis lies with string theory, we will discus only this approach.

String theory [4, 5, 6, 7, 8] was first developed in 1960s, where it was originally conceived not as a theory of quantum gravity but as a theory of strong nuclear interactions. Due to advent of quantum field theory, string theory was replaced as main contender for description of strong nuclear force. However, it was observed that theory possesses few interesting features to be scraped entirely. Of all features, by far most important one was that in context of string theory gravity naturally emerges. There was no need to forcibly mesh quantum mechanics and general relativity. Because of this progress in string theory has switched from description of strong nuclear force to possible description of all reality. In years following its conceivement, theory has undergone two major revolutions. First of which was introduction of supersymmetry, making theory applicable to both bosonic and fermionic states. Second revolution occurred when it was noticed that by introducing supersymmetry we inevitably bring along two additional symmetries, S and T dualities, and that there are now finite many consistent string theories. Dualities that emerge now span a web that connects all possible supersymmetric string theories, hinting that there should exist one over encompassing theory. It is not yet know if any of superstring models fully describes our universe and there is still ongoing work to determine this.

Even though there are few ongoing directions which could result in theory of quantum gravity, it should be noted that these alternate approaches are not always mutually exclusive. For example, coordinate non-commutativity also appears in context of string theory [9]. Where it was shown that open strings endpoints which usually propagate along Dirichlet manifold, in certain conditions propagate along non-commutative manifold, in turn giving rise to noncommutative properties. Non-commutativity has also been observed in closed strings, although for different reasons [10]. In case of close string, non-commutativity arises only if we have theory with coordinate dependent fields. By applying T-duality to such models it has been shown that T-dual theories are non-commutative ones. Work until now has been done only on bosonic coordinates, it was not until 2008 that it was found that same duality can emerge in case of fermionic coordinates [11]. This has given rise to possibility that results that have been obtained for supersymmetric particle would naturally follow for supersymmetric string. One of these results [12] is that there would be emergence of non-commutativity between fermionic coordinates which is proportional to bosonic ones. It has been suggested that by working with special configuration of background fields same result would be obtainable in string theory [13]. For now, these connections between supersymmetric particle and string theory are only

speculations.

In this thesis, we will focus on examining non-commutativity for closed strings. We fill focus on two models, one for bosonic strings and other for superstrings. Since for these string theories non-commutativity only emerges in T-dual theories if we have coordinate dependent background fields, we will incorporate these kind of fields into our examination. For bosonic string we will be working with coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramond field, while in case of superstring we will be working with coordinate dependent Ramond-Ramond field. While our choice of bosonic string background field has already been examined [14], approach that we will undertake is novel and it is only based on utilization of T-duality. We will also be discussing possibility of alternative routes for obtaining non-commutativity. For superstring, we decided to work with coordinate dependent Ramond-Ramond field because this configuration of fields was used as a basis for speculation of existence of fermionic non-commutativity [13] and our intention is to test if there is any validity to this hypothesis. Just as in the case of bosonic string, we will test alternative routes for obtaining T-dual theories. One where we first perform dualization along bosonic and then fermionic coordinates and one where this direction is reversed. In both models noncommutativity will be analyzed by establishing a link between coordinates of starting theory and coordinates of T-dual theory. This link when paired with Poisson brackets of starting model will in turn give rise to T-dual Poisson brackets. At the end of the thesis, we will also give short examination of case when we have more general structure of Ramond-Ramond field. Where only T-duality of bosonic coordinates will be examined.

In order to not be overwhelmed by new ideas and concepts, in this chapter we decided to give short introduction to bosonic strings, superstrings and T-duality. Where most concepts that will later be utilized are developed.

# 2.1 Bosonic string theory in coordinate dependent background fields

To gain understanding of string theory in general it is useful to begin with examination of bosonic string theory. While this theory lacks many features that would make it suitable for description of real world phenomena, results that are obtained here can be easily generalized to more realistic cases. Since string theory has been historically developed as an extension of model that describes free bosonic particle [4, 5, 6, 7, 8], it is educational for us to start at the same point.

# 2.1.1 Relativistic point particle

We begin by examining the action of particle of mass m that propagates in D dimensional space-time where we also have gravitational field described by metric tensor  $G_{\mu\nu}$ . This particle traces out 1-dimensional trajectory denoted with  $x^{\mu}(\tau)$  ( $\mu = 0, 1, ..., D$ ) called "world line", where  $\tau$  is some arbitrary parameter we call "proper time". Particles trajectory is geodesic thus its action has to be proportional to invariant length of world line

$$S = -m \int ds, \qquad (2.1.1)$$

where invariant length is given as

$$ds = \sqrt{-G_{\mu\nu}(x)} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau} d\tau.$$
(2.1.2)

Equations of motion for particle are obtained by variation of above action with respect to  $x^{\mu}$ , thus obtaining

$$\frac{d^2 x^{\mu}}{d\tau^2} + \Gamma^{\mu}_{\nu\rho} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\rho}}{d\tau}, \qquad (2.1.3)$$

where we introduced Cristoffel symbol  $\Gamma^{\mu}_{\nu\rho}$  as

$$\Gamma^{\mu}_{\nu\rho} = G^{\mu\sigma}(x) \frac{1}{2} \left( \partial_{\nu} G_{\sigma\rho}(x) + \partial_{\rho} G_{\nu\sigma}(x) - \partial_{\sigma} G_{\nu\rho}(x) \right).$$
(2.1.4)

### 2.1. Bosonic string theory in coordinate dependent background fields

Action that we introduced possesses one important quality and that is invariance under reparametrizations  $\tau \to \tau' = f(\tau)$ . However, this action also posses few negative qualities. First of which is presence of square root, in turn making any attempt at quantization quite difficult. Second negative quality is that this action only describes massive particles. Both of those negative qualities can be resolved by introducing additional auxiliary field  $e(\tau)$  and by utilizing action that is equivalent to starting action at classical level

$$S = \frac{1}{2} \int \left( \frac{1}{e} G_{\mu\nu}(x) \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau} - em^2 \right) d\tau.$$
(2.1.5)

In order to see that this new action is equivalent to the old one, we can find equation of motion for auxiliary field  $e(\tau)$ 

$$G_{\mu\nu}(x)\frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau}\frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau} - e^2m^2 = 0,$$
(2.1.6)

and substitute it into the action (2.1.5), from this we recover starting action (2.1.1). This equation can be thought of as mass-shell condition for propagation in curved space-time. In order to see if new action is also invariant under reparametrization, let us consider infinitesimal transformation of type

$$\tau \to \tau' = \tau + \lambda(\tau). \tag{2.1.7}$$

Coordinates  $x^{\mu}(\tau)$  transform as scalars under reparametrization, thus for them we have

$$\delta_0 x^{\mu}(\tau) = x^{\mu'}(\tau) - x^{\mu}(\tau) = -\lambda(\tau) \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau}.$$
 (2.1.8)

Transformation of auxiliary field can be obtained if we notice that second term in action (2.1.5) must transform according to

$$e(\tau)d\tau = e'(\tau')d\tau', \qquad (2.1.9)$$

from which we can deduce following transformation rule

$$\delta_0 e(\tau) = e'(\tau) - e(\tau) = -\frac{d}{d\tau}(\lambda e).$$
 (2.1.10)

Having obtained how all fields behave under reparametrization of parameter  $\tau$  it is straightforward to check that whole action (2.1.5) is also invariant

$$\delta_0 S = \frac{1}{2} \int d\tau \left( \frac{2}{e} G_{\mu\nu}(x) \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{d\delta_0 x^{\nu}}{d\tau} + \frac{1}{e} \partial_{\rho} G_{\mu\nu}(x) \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau} \delta_0 x^{\rho} - \frac{1}{e^2} G_{\mu\nu}(x) \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau} \delta_0 e - m^2 \delta_0 e \right)$$
(2.1.11)

Applying partial integration to first term, neglecting surface terms and by plugging in transformation laws it is easy to show that

$$\delta_0 S = 0. (2.1.12)$$

This proves to us that by adding additional auxiliary field we can be sure that we are not changing any underlying physics of the theory.

# 2.1.2 Bosonic string theory

Main idea of bosonic string theory is really simple, instead of working with action that describes dynamics of point-like object in space-time we work with action that describes one dimensional object, called string, which propagates in space-time. Propagation of string in space-time sweeps two dimensional surface called world-sheet. By working in D dimensional space-time, we denote the location of the string by coordinates  $x^{\mu}(\tau, \sigma)$  ( $\mu = 0, 1, ..., D$ ), due to increase in dimensionality of the object we are analyzing, we also have increase in number of parameters needed for its parameterization. Where we have that world-sheet surface  $\Sigma$  is parameterized by  $\tau$  and  $\sigma$  (in future chapters we will also utilize be  $\xi^0$  and  $\xi^1$ ). Action is formed by maximization of surface and it has following form

$$S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d\mu. \tag{2.1.13}$$

Here k is called tension of the brane and it has dimmensionality of the  $(mass)^2$  or  $(length)^{-2}$ . Brane tension is also usually represented as  $\kappa = 1/(2\pi\alpha')$ , where parameter  $\alpha'$  is named Regge slope. We have that  $d\mu$  represent surface element which, in order for action to be dimensionless, has dimensionality of  $(length)^2$ . Surface element it is given by

$$d\mu = \sqrt{-\det(G_{\mu\nu}(x)\partial_m x^{\mu}\partial_n x^{\nu})}d^2\xi = \sqrt{-\det(G_{mn})}d^2\xi, \quad (m, n = 0, 1.),$$
(2.1.14)

$$G_{mn} = G_{\mu\nu}(x)\partial_m x^\mu \partial_n x^\nu. \tag{2.1.15}$$

Just like before, we have that  $G_{\mu\nu}$  describes metric of D dimensional space-time. We have also took the liberty to denote  $d\tau d\sigma$  as  $d^2\xi$ , while indices m and n are world-sheet indices. The metric  $G_{mn}$  is known as induced world-sheet metric

Similarly, as in case of point particle, we would like to obtain action that does not posses square root. Again this can be accomplished by introducing additional auxiliary field, this time we have auxiliary metric  $g_{mn}$  that describes intrinsic geometry of the two dimensional manifold. It should also be noted that auxiliary metric has Lorenzian signature. Action for bosonic string can then be transcribed as

$$S = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \sqrt{-g} g^{mn}(\xi) G_{\mu\nu}(x) \partial_m x^{\mu} \partial_n x^{\nu}, \qquad (2.1.16)$$

where  $g^{mn}$  is inverse and g is determinant of  $g_{mn}$ .

In order to examine some interesting properties of this action we will analyze its local symmetries, in case when space-time has Minkowski metric. First symmetry is invariance to reparametrizations

$$\xi^{m\prime} = \xi^m - \lambda^m, \tag{2.1.17}$$

$$\delta_0 x^\mu = \lambda^m \partial_m x^\mu, \tag{2.1.18}$$

$$\delta_0 g^{mn} = \lambda^r \partial_r g^{mn} - \partial_r \lambda^m g^{rn} - \partial_r \lambda^n g^{mr}, \qquad (2.1.19)$$

$$\delta_0 \sqrt{-g} = \partial_m (\lambda^m \sqrt{-g}). \tag{2.1.20}$$

Second local symmetry is invariance to Weyl scaling

$$\delta_0 g^{mn} = \Lambda(\xi) g^{mn}. \tag{2.1.21}$$

While now presented just as curiosity, Weyl invariance plays a major role in derivation of consistency equations for background fields. Both  $\lambda^m$  and  $\Lambda$  are functions of world-sheet coordinates  $\xi^0$  and  $\xi^1$ .

In addition to these local symmetries, action also possess Poincaré invariance

$$\delta_0 x^\mu = \omega^\mu_{\ \nu} x^\nu + l^\mu, \tag{2.1.22}$$

$$\delta_0 g^{mn} = 0. (2.1.23)$$

where  $\omega^{\mu}{}_{\nu}$  is antisymmetric.

Due to presence of Weyl invariance in bosonic string action we have that trace of energymomentum tensor is zero,  $g^{mn}T_{mn} = 0$ . This tensor is given as a variation of action with respect to world-sheet metric tensor  $g^{mn}$ 

$$T_{mn} = \frac{2}{\kappa} \frac{1}{\sqrt{g}} \frac{\delta S}{\delta g^{mn}} = \partial_m x^\mu \partial_n x_\mu - \frac{1}{2} g_{mn} g^{kl} \partial_k x^\mu \partial_l x_\mu$$
(2.1.24)

Since term  $\delta S/\delta g^{mn}$  represents equation of motion for field  $g^{mn}$ , we than have that energymomentum tensor is zero. With this result obtained, we return to examination of bosonic string in nontrivial background fields.

# 2.1.3 Inclusion of background fields

We have already seen how we can incorporate space-time metric in bosonic string theory (2.1.16).

$$S_1 = \frac{k}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \sqrt{-g} g^{mn}(\sigma) G_{\mu\nu}(x) \partial_m x^{\mu} \partial_n x^{\nu}.$$
(2.1.25)

Inclusion of this tensor does not change any of local symmetries that we had in Minkowski case. Similarly, energy-momentum tensor is also zero.

In addition to space-time metric, there are two more massless tensors that can be added into the theory. First of these tensors is antisymmetric Kalb-Ramond field  $B_{\mu\nu}$ . Action that contains this tensor is given by

$$S_2 = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \epsilon^{mn}(\sigma) B_{\mu\nu}(x) \partial_m x^{\mu} \partial_n x^{\nu}. \qquad (2.1.26)$$

Where we needed to introduce two dimensional Levi-Civita tensor  $\epsilon^{mn}$  with signature  $\epsilon^{\tau\sigma} = -1$ . Similarly to space-time metric tensor, Kalb-Ramond field does not break reparametrization invariance or Weyl symmetry.

Final massless tensor that can be added to theory is scalar dilaton field  $\Phi(x)$ . This field couples to world-sheet scalar curvature

$$S_3 = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \sqrt{-g} \Phi(x) R^{(2)}.$$
 (2.1.27)

Including dilation field into bosonic string violates Weyl invariance of the action [15]. It is necessary for consistency of the theory, if we want to make sensible quantum theory, that action be locally scale invariant. That is, we need to have traceless world-sheet energy momentum tensor. Breakdown of scale invariance in quantum field theories is usually encapsulated in  $\beta$ functions, where these functions arise from unltaviolet divergences in Feynman diagrams.

For theory that contains all tree terms we have following action

$$S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \sqrt{-g} \left\{ \left[ \frac{1}{2} g^{mn} G_{\mu\nu}(x) + \frac{\epsilon^{mn}}{\sqrt{-g}} B_{\mu\nu}(x) \right] \partial_m x^\mu \partial_n x^\nu + \Phi(x) R^{(2)} \right\}.$$
 (2.1.28)

For this action, trace of energy-momentum tensor has following general structure

$$2\pi T_m^m = \beta^{\Phi} \sqrt{-g} R^{(2)} + \beta_{\mu\nu}^G \sqrt{-g} g^{mn} \partial_m x^{\mu} \partial_n x^{\nu} + \beta_{\mu\nu}^B \epsilon^{mn} \partial_m x^{\mu} \partial_n x^{\nu}, \qquad (2.1.29)$$

where  $\beta^{\Phi}$ ,  $\beta^{G}$  and  $\beta^{B}$  are local functions of the coupling functions  $\Phi(x)$ ,  $G_{\mu\nu}(x)$  and  $B_{\mu\nu}(x)$ . Given  $\beta$  functions can be calculated in perturbation theory, where we find vacuum expectation values of vertex operators. By performing these calculations, which are far beyond the scope of this thesis, and demanding that trace of energy-momentum tensor be zero we arrive at following set of equations [16]

$$\beta_{\mu\nu}^{G} \equiv R_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{4} B_{\mu\rho\sigma} B_{\nu}^{\rho\sigma} + 2D_{\mu} a_{\nu} = 0, \qquad (2.1.30)$$

$$\beta^B_{\mu\nu} \equiv D_\rho B^\rho_{\mu\nu} - 2a_\rho B^\rho_{\mu\nu} = 0, \qquad (2.1.31)$$

$$\beta^{\Phi} \equiv 2\pi\kappa \frac{D-26}{6} - R - \frac{1}{24} B_{\mu\rho\sigma} B^{\mu\rho\sigma} - D_{\mu} a^{\mu} + 4a^2 = c, \qquad (2.1.32)$$

Here c is undetermined constant called Schwinger term,  $D_{\mu}$  are space-time covariant derivatives and  $R_{\mu\nu}$  is space-time Ricci tensor [17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22]. Expressions for

$$B_{\mu\nu\rho} = \partial_{\mu}B_{\nu\rho} + \partial_{\nu}B_{\rho\mu} + \partial_{\rho}B_{\mu\nu}, \quad a_{\mu} = \partial_{\mu}\Phi, \qquad (2.1.33)$$

represents field strength of Kalb-Ramond field [23, 24], while  $a_{\mu}$  is dilaton gradient. First term in  $\beta^{\Phi}$  comes from conformal gauge Faddeev-Popov determinant [25]. In addition to these equations we also have following relation

$$D^{\nu}\beta^G_{\nu\mu} + \partial_{\mu}\beta^{\Phi} = 0, \qquad (2.1.34)$$

which allows us to set  $\beta^{\Phi}$  to constant.

By solving equations (2.1.30), (2.1.31) and (2.1.32) we will be able to find coordinate dependent configuration of background fields that will be used in examination of bosonics string non-commutativity.

# 2.2 Supersymmetric string theory

Having developed action for bosonic string we now focus on more complex case of superstrings. This immediately raises the question, why? Answer lies in the fact that bosonic string theory has few irredeemable qualities which make it unfit to be considered as theory of everything. First of these problems is the fact that theory requires 26 dimensional space-time to operate. Second problem is existence of tachyons, making vacuum unstable. While it is true that both of these problems could be solvable, first by compactification of extra dimensions and second could also be solvable by finding some other stable vacuum. Third problem that theory possesses is sadly the greatest one and it is not solvable, theory lacks fermionic states. If we ever wish to describe real world we must have theory that deals with both bosons and fermions.

Introduction of fermionic states can be done in few different way, however all are focused on incorporation of supersymmetry [4, 6, 7, 8]. This can be done by adding supersymmetry at world-sheet level or at space-time level producing two different formalism, Ramond-Neveu-Schwarz formalism and Green-Schwarz formalism respectively. While distinct, it can be shown that these two fromulations are equivalent. These two formulations have one major flaw and that is that they needlesly complicate introduction of nontrivial background fields. Fortunately in last few years there has been emergence of third formulation of superstring theory, pure spinor formulation [26, 27, 28, 29, 30]. While having more technical difficulties in obtaining the starting action, theory shines in generalization of flat space action to one with complex fields. Where all fields are incorporated by adding integrated massless vertex operator [31] to the action of flat theory. This section will focus on obtaining pure spinor superstring theory.

# 2.2.1 Supersymmetric point particle

Just as was case for bosonic strings, in order to obtain action for supersymmetric string theory we need to start with action for supersymmetric point particle. This action is in fact generalization of action for point particle that we had before and action (2.1.5) will be our starting point

$$S = \int \frac{1}{2e} \dot{x}^2 d\tau, \qquad (2.2.35)$$

where we will work with flat Minkowski space-time. Since the mass term is not relevant for examination of string theory we decided to set m to zero.

In order to obtain supersymmetry we need to expand the space from only including bosonic coordinates  $x^{\mu}$  to also including fermionic  $\theta^{A\alpha}$  ones, here index A = 1, 2, ...N denotes the number of supersymmetry and in turn number of anticommutating spinor coordinates, since higher order of supersymmetry does not produce any additional insight we will be only interested in case where A = 1 and from now on we will be neglecting this index. Index  $\alpha$  denotes spinor components and in general for Dirac spinor it is dependent on number of dimensions D of space-time, where we have  $\alpha = 0, 1..., 2^{D/2}$ . Supersymmetry is obtained by demanding that both bosonic and fermionic coordinates transform in certain way

$$\delta_0 \theta^\alpha = \epsilon^\alpha, \quad \delta_0 x^\mu = i \epsilon^\alpha (\Gamma^\mu)_{\alpha\beta} \theta^\beta, \quad \delta_0 e = 0.$$
(2.2.36)

Here  $\epsilon^{\alpha}$  is infinitesimal constant Grassmann parameter,  $(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}$  are Dirac matrices in D dimensions. Since we are interested only in Majorana-Weyl spinors, above relations are written in form appropriate to these spinors. It should be noted that these transformation laws do not single out any specific action. While there are many different supersymmetric actions that can be written we are only interested in simplest one, this leaves us with

$$S = \int \frac{1}{2e} \left( \dot{x} - i\theta^{\alpha} (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \dot{\theta}^{\beta} \right)^2 d\tau.$$
 (2.2.37)

This action is invariant to full super-Poincaré symmetry. Equations of motion for  $e, x^{\mu}$  and  $\theta^{\alpha}$ , respectively are

$$\Pi^{2} = 0, \quad \dot{\Pi}^{\mu} = 0, \quad (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \Pi_{\mu} \dot{\theta}^{\beta} = 0.$$
 (2.2.38)

where we denoted with  $\Pi^{\mu}$ 

$$\Pi^{\mu} = \dot{x}^{\mu} - i\theta^{\alpha} (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \dot{\theta}^{\beta}.$$
(2.2.39)

Since we have that  $\theta^{\alpha}$  always comes attached to term  $\Gamma^{\mu}\Pi_{\mu}$  and  $(\Gamma^{\mu}\Pi_{\mu})^2 = -\Pi^2$ , action possesses additional symmetry. This is local symmetry known in literature as  $\kappa$  symmetry. By denoting with  $\kappa(\tau)$  infinitesimal Grassmann spinor parameters we can observe that action is invariant under

$$\delta_{\kappa}\theta^{\alpha} = (\Gamma^{\mu})^{\alpha\beta}\Pi_{\mu}\kappa_{\beta}, \quad \delta_{\kappa}x^{\mu} = i\theta^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\delta_{\kappa}\theta^{\beta}, \quad \delta_{\kappa}e = 4ie\dot{\theta}^{\alpha}\kappa_{\alpha}. \tag{2.2.40}$$

To see that action (2.2.37) is invariant under these transformations we can start by examining how  $\Pi^{\mu}$  and  $e^{-1}$  transform

$$\delta_{\kappa}\Pi^{\mu} = \delta_{\kappa}\dot{x}^{\mu} - i\delta_{\kappa}\theta^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\dot{\theta}^{\beta} - -i\theta^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\delta_{\kappa}\dot{\theta}^{\beta}$$
  
$$= i\dot{\theta}^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\delta_{\kappa}\theta^{\beta} + i\theta^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\delta_{\kappa}\dot{\theta}^{\beta} - i\delta_{\kappa}\theta^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\dot{\theta}^{\beta} - -i\theta^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\delta_{\kappa}\dot{\theta}^{\beta}$$
  
$$= 2i\dot{\theta}^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\delta_{\kappa}\theta^{\beta}. \qquad (2.2.41)$$

$$\delta_{\kappa}\Pi^{2} = 2\Pi_{\mu}\delta_{\kappa}\Pi^{\mu} = 4i\dot{\theta}^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\delta_{\kappa}\theta^{\beta}\Pi_{\mu} = 4i\Pi^{2}\dot{\theta}^{\alpha}\kappa_{\alpha}$$
(2.2.42)

$$\delta_{\kappa}e^{-1} = -e^{-2}\delta_{\kappa}e = -4ie^{-1}\dot{\theta}^{\alpha}\kappa_{\alpha}.$$
(2.2.43)

Finding variation of action we have

$$\delta_{\kappa}S = \frac{1}{2}\int \left(\delta_{\kappa}e^{-1}\Pi^2 + e^{-1}\delta_{\kappa}\Pi^2\right) = \frac{i}{2}\int \left(4e^{-1}\Pi^2\dot{\theta}^{\alpha}\kappa_{\alpha} - 4e^{-1}\Pi^2\dot{\theta}^{\alpha}\kappa_{\alpha}\right) = 0.$$
(2.2.44)

While here, presented for sake of completeness, existence of  $\kappa$  symmetry is crucial for obtaining Green-Schwarz formulation of string theory. Now we will demonstrate procedure for obtaining pure spinor description of superparticle. Methods that we develop here will be exactly the same as ones needed for string.

# 2.2.2 Pure spinor formulation of supersymmetric point particle

Before proceeding with pure spinor formalism it should be noted that action (2.2.37) possessess constraints. This can easily be seen by finding conjugated momentum of fermionic coordinate

$$\pi_{\alpha} = \frac{\delta S}{\delta \dot{\theta}} = i \pi^{\mu} (\Gamma_{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \theta^{\beta} = i \left( \dot{x}^{\mu} - i \theta^{\alpha_1} (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha_1 \beta_1} \dot{\theta}^{\beta_1} \right) (\Gamma_{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \theta^{\beta}, \qquad (2.2.45)$$

$$\pi_{\mu} = \dot{x}^{\mu} - i\theta^{\alpha_1} (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha_1\beta_1} \dot{\theta}^{\beta_1}.$$
 (2.2.46)

where  $\pi_{\mu}$  is conjugate momenta of bosonic coordinate  $x^{\mu}$ . While expressions for  $\pi_{\mu}$  and  $\Pi_{\mu}$  are identical it should be noted that their interpretations are different, one is conjugate momenta and other is just combination of bosonic and fermionic coordinates that is invariant under supersymmetry transformations. If we decided to take more complex supersymmetry invariant combination of coordinates, these terms would not coincide. From this we see that

$$d_{\alpha} = \pi_{\alpha} + i\dot{x}_{\mu}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\theta^{\beta} + (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\theta^{\beta}\theta^{\alpha_{1}}(\Gamma_{\mu})_{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}\dot{\theta}^{\beta_{1}}, \qquad (2.2.47)$$

represents constraint. Since fermionic coordinates  $\theta^{\alpha}$  and their conjugated momenta  $\pi_{\alpha}$  satisfy following Poisson bracket

$$\{\pi_{\alpha}, \theta^{\beta}\} = \delta^{\beta}_{\alpha}, \qquad (2.2.48)$$

we have that constraint satisfy

$$\{d_{\alpha}, d_{\beta}\} = \pi_{\mu}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}. \tag{2.2.49}$$

Starting point for pure spinor particle is by replacing action (2.2.37) with following quadratic action [32]

$$S = \int d\tau \left( \pi_{\mu} \dot{x}^{\mu} + \pi_{\alpha} \dot{\theta}^{\alpha} + \omega_{\alpha} \dot{\lambda}^{\alpha} - \frac{1}{2} \pi^{\mu} \pi_{\mu} \right), \qquad (2.2.50)$$

where  $\pi_{\alpha}$  are now independent variables [33] and  $\lambda^{\alpha}$  are pure spinor ghost variables satisfying pure spinor constraints

$$\lambda^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\lambda^{\beta} = 0. \tag{2.2.51}$$

Their conjugated momenta are given by  $\omega_{\alpha}$  and they are defined up to gauge transformation

$$\delta_0 \omega_\alpha = (\Gamma^\mu)_{\alpha\beta} \lambda^\beta \Lambda_\mu. \tag{2.2.52}$$

To obtain correct physical states, action (2.2.50) needs to be supplemented with BRST like operator

$$Q = \lambda^{\alpha} d_{\alpha}, \tag{2.2.53}$$

where all physical states are in the cohomology of above given operator. We have that  $Q^2 = 0$ and this operator carries ghost number +1, that is if we define that  $\lambda^{\alpha}$  and  $\omega_{\alpha}$  carry ghost numbers +1 and -1 respectively. This operator possesses few interesting properties, for example in case of massless relativistic point particle we had following mass-shell relation  $\pi_{\mu}\pi^{\mu} = 0$ , here this is indirectly implied by operator Q. Furthermore, we had that supersymmetric particle action is invariant under  $\kappa$  symmetry, here we have that pure spinor action does not posses this symmetry but is in fact replaced by gauge invariance generated by Q.

Now we would like to examine how to obtain background fields in which superparticle can propagate. We will give example for case where ghost number is +1, then wave function can be described as

$$\Psi(x,\theta) = \lambda^{\alpha} A_{\alpha}(x,\theta), \qquad (2.2.54)$$

here  $A_{\alpha}$  is the superfield. By acting with Q on this wave function we obtain

$$Q\Psi(x,\theta) = \lambda^{\alpha}\lambda^{\beta}D_{\alpha}A_{\beta} = 0, \qquad (2.2.55)$$

this relation implies

$$(\Gamma_{[\mu\nu\rho\delta\gamma]})^{\alpha\beta}D_{\alpha}A_{\beta} = 0, \qquad (2.2.56)$$

where  $D_{\alpha} = \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta^{\alpha}} + \frac{i}{2} (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \theta^{\beta} \frac{\partial}{\partial x^{\mu}}$  is supersymmetric derivative and  $(\Gamma_{[\mu\nu\rho\delta\gamma]})^{\alpha\beta}$  is totally antisymmetric product of five gamma matrices. Imposing following variation of wave function

$$\delta_0 \Psi(x,\theta) = Q\Lambda = \lambda^\alpha D_\alpha \Lambda, \qquad (2.2.57)$$

we have following transformation for superfield

$$\delta_0 A_\alpha(x,\theta) = D_\alpha \Lambda(x,\theta). \tag{2.2.58}$$

This means that equation (2.2.56) and (2.2.58) are Maxwell equations of motion and gauge invariance for superfield  $A_{\alpha}$ . It should also be noted that field  $A_{\alpha}$  can be transcribed as expansion in fermionic coordinates as

$$A_{\alpha}(x,\theta) = f_{\alpha}(x) + f_{\alpha\beta}(x)\theta^{\beta} + f_{\alpha\beta\rho}(x)\theta^{\beta}\theta^{\rho} + \dots$$
(2.2.59)

By using wave function with ghost numbers that are different from +1 we can obtain more background fields and their equations of motion, sadly we will omit analyzing such cases.

# 2.2.3 Superstring

Action for superstring follows the same philosophy as the one we had for superparticle. In short, we want to expand spacetime by introducing fermionic coordinates and by finding some combination of coordinates that is invariant to supersymmetry. This is accomplished by following combination

$$\Pi_m^{\mu} = \partial_m x^{\mu} - i\theta^{\alpha A} (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_m \theta^{\beta A}.$$
(2.2.60)

Superstrings are defined in ten dimensional space time, therefore we have that  $\mu = 0, 1...9$ , while for spinors we have  $\alpha = 1, 2, ..., 16$ . Indices m and n are world-sheet indices as before. Depending on the type of superstring theory, we have different number for supersymmetry. We are mainly interested in type II superstrings, hence we will be working with N = 2 SUSY. This way we can transcribe above equation as

$$\Pi_m^{\mu} = \partial_m x^{\mu} - i\theta^{\alpha} (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_m \theta^{\beta} - i\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} (\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_m \bar{\theta}^{\beta}.$$
(2.2.61)

#### 2.2. Supersymmetric string theory

Based on chirality of spinors, there is further subdivison of type II theory. We have type IIA for opposite chirality and type IIB superstring theory for same chirality. Having defined supersymmetry invariant combination of coordinates, action has following form

$$S = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \sqrt{-g} g^{mn} \Pi^{\mu}_m \Pi_{n\mu}$$
(2.2.62)

This action, just as one for superparticle, is invariant under reparametrization and  $\kappa$  transformations. Action also has following constraints

$$d_{m\alpha} = \pi_{m\alpha} + \left(i\partial_m x^\mu + \frac{1}{2}\theta^{\alpha_1}(\Gamma^\mu)_{\alpha_1\beta_1}\partial_m\theta^{\beta_1} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha_1}(\Gamma^\mu)_{\alpha_1\beta_1}\partial_m\bar{\theta}^{\beta_1}\right)(\Gamma_\mu)_{\alpha\beta}\theta^\beta, \qquad (2.2.63)$$

$$\bar{d}_{m\alpha} = \bar{\pi}_{m\alpha} + \left(i\partial_m x^\mu + \frac{1}{2}\theta^{\alpha_1}(\Gamma^\mu)_{\alpha_1\beta_1}\partial_m\theta^{\beta_1} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha_1}(\Gamma^\mu)_{\alpha_1\beta_1}\partial_m\bar{\theta}^{\beta_1}\right)(\Gamma_\mu)_{\alpha\beta}\bar{\theta}^{\beta}.$$
 (2.2.64)

$$\pi_{m\alpha} = i\Pi^{\mu}_{m}(\Gamma_{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\theta^{\beta}, \quad \bar{\pi}_{m\alpha} = i\Pi^{\mu}_{m}(\Gamma_{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\bar{\theta}^{\beta}.$$
(2.2.65)

For pure spinor formalism, we make a switch from action (2.2.61) to action for flat space-time that is quadratic [26, 27, 28, 29]

$$S = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left( \frac{\kappa}{2} \eta_{\mu\nu} \partial_m x^{\mu} \partial_n x^{\nu} \eta^{mn} - \pi_{\alpha} \partial_- \theta^{\alpha} + \partial_+ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \bar{\pi}_{\alpha} + \omega_{\alpha} \partial_- \lambda^{\alpha} + \bar{\omega}_{\alpha} \partial_+ \bar{\lambda}^{\alpha} \right), \qquad (2.2.66)$$

Here  $x^{\mu}$ ,  $\theta^{\alpha}$ ,  $\pi_{\alpha}$ ,  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\pi}_{\alpha}$  are Green-Schwarz-Siegel matter variables where indices take range  $\mu = 0, 1..9, \alpha = 1, 2, ...16$ . Pure spinors are labeled with  $\lambda^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\lambda}^{\alpha}$ , while their conjugated momenta are  $\omega_{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\omega}_{\alpha}$ , respectively. We have that pure spinors satisfy pure spinor constraints

$$\lambda^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\lambda^{\beta} = \bar{\lambda}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\bar{\lambda}^{\beta} = 0. \qquad (2.2.67)$$

Similarly as in the case of superparticle, in order to obtain physical states we need to introduce operator BRST like operator Q, however in order to do that we need to transcribe equations (2.2.63) and (2.2.64) into light-cone coordinates

$$d_{\alpha} = \pi_{\alpha} - \frac{1}{2} (\Gamma_{\mu} \theta)_{\alpha} \left[ \partial_{+} x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{4} (\theta \Gamma^{\mu} \partial_{+} \theta) \right], \qquad (2.2.68)$$

$$\bar{d}_{\alpha} = \bar{\pi}_{\alpha} - \frac{1}{2} (\Gamma_{\mu} \bar{\theta})_{\alpha} \left[ \partial_{-} x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{4} (\bar{\theta} \Gamma^{\mu} \partial_{-} \bar{\theta}) \right], \qquad (2.2.69)$$

then we have

$$Q_L = \int d\xi^+ \lambda^\alpha d_\alpha, \quad Q_R = \int d\xi^- \bar{\lambda}^\alpha \bar{d}_\alpha, \qquad (2.2.70)$$

where

$$Q_L^2 = -\int d\xi^+ \lambda^\alpha (\Gamma^\mu)_{\alpha\beta} \lambda^\beta \Pi_{+\mu}, \quad Q_R^2 = -\int d\xi^- \bar{\lambda}^\alpha (\Gamma^\mu)_{\alpha\beta} \bar{\lambda}^\beta \Pi_{-\mu}. \tag{2.2.71}$$

Due to pure spinor constraint equations (2.2.67) we have that  $Q_L$  and  $Q_R$  are nillpotent. We

introduced following two combinations of coordinates written in light-cone coordinates

$$\Pi^{\mu}_{+} = \partial_{+}x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{2}\theta^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\partial_{+}\theta^{\beta}, \quad \Pi^{\mu}_{-} = \partial_{-}x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\partial_{-}\bar{\theta}^{\beta}.$$
(2.2.72)

For ghost number zero, massless super Yang-Mills states are obtained from following unintegrated and integrated vertex operators

$$V = \lambda^{\alpha} A_{\alpha}(x,\theta,\theta),$$

$$\int d\xi^{+} U = \int d\xi^{+} \left( \partial_{+} \theta^{\alpha} A_{\alpha}(x,\theta,\bar{\theta}) + \Pi^{\mu}_{+} A_{\mu}(x,\theta,\bar{\theta}) + d_{\alpha} W^{\alpha}(x,\theta,\bar{\theta}) + N_{+\mu\nu} F^{\mu\nu}(x,\theta,\bar{\theta}) \right).$$
(2.2.73)

Here  $A_{\alpha}$  and  $A_{\mu}$  are gauge fields, while  $W^{\alpha}$  and  $F^{\mu\nu}$  are superfield-strengths for super Yang-Mills. We also have introduction of Lorentz currents for pure spinor variables, given as

$$N^{\mu\nu}_{+} = \frac{1}{2} \omega_{\alpha} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]})^{\alpha}{}_{\beta} \lambda^{\beta}, \quad \bar{N}^{\mu\nu}_{-} = \frac{1}{2} \bar{\omega}_{\alpha} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]})^{\alpha}{}_{\beta} \bar{\lambda}^{\beta}.$$
(2.2.74)

By acting with Q on vertex operator in both integrated and unintegrated form and by demanding that

$$QV = 0, \quad QU = \partial_+ V, \tag{2.2.75}$$

we can obtain equations of motion for fields with ghost number zero. However, we are not only interested in background fields with ghost number zero, we are interested in all possible background fields that are allowed by the theory. Fortunately there is finite amount of fields that are allowed, they can be collected into a supermatrix  $A_{MN}$ , while integrated form of vertex operator is given by

$$V_{SG} = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi (X^T)^M A_{MN} \bar{X}^N.$$
 (2.2.76)

$$X^{M} = \begin{pmatrix} \partial_{+}\theta^{\alpha} \\ \Pi^{\mu}_{+} \\ d_{\alpha} \\ \frac{1}{2}N^{\mu\nu}_{+} \end{pmatrix}, \quad \bar{X}^{M} = \begin{pmatrix} \partial_{-}\bar{\theta}^{\lambda} \\ \Pi^{\mu}_{-} \\ \bar{d}_{\lambda} \\ \frac{1}{2}\bar{N}^{\mu\nu}_{-} \end{pmatrix}, \quad A_{MN} = \begin{bmatrix} A_{\alpha\beta} & A_{\alpha\nu} & E_{\alpha}^{\ \beta} & \Omega_{\alpha,\mu\nu} \\ A_{\mu\beta} & A_{\mu\nu} & \bar{E}^{\beta}_{\mu} & \Omega_{\mu,\nu\rho} \\ E^{\alpha}{}_{\beta} & E^{\alpha}_{\nu} & P^{\alpha\beta} & C^{\alpha}{}_{\mu\nu} \\ \Omega_{\mu\nu,\beta} & \Omega_{\mu\nu,\rho} & \bar{C}^{\beta}{}_{\mu\nu} & S_{\mu\nu,\rho\sigma} \end{bmatrix}.$$
(2.2.77)

Here, fields  $A_{\mu\nu}$ ,  $\bar{E}^{\alpha}_{\mu}$ ,  $E^{\alpha}_{\mu}$  and  $P^{\alpha\beta}$  are known as physical superfields, while superfields that are in the first row and the first column are known as auxiliary because they can be expressed in terms of physical ones [31]. Remaining superfields  $\Omega_{\mu,\nu\rho}$  ( $\Omega_{\mu\nu,\rho}$ ),  $C^{\alpha}{}_{\mu\nu}$  ( $\bar{C}^{\beta}{}_{\mu\nu}$ ) and  $S_{\mu\nu,\rho\sigma}$ , are curvatures (field strengths) for physical fields. This notation is in accordance with Ref [31]. By acting with BRST operators  $Q_L$  and  $Q_R$  on this vertex operator we obtain following equations for background fields. 2.2. Supersymmetric string theory

$$(1 + \mathbf{D})A_{\alpha\beta} = (\Gamma^{\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}A_{\mu\beta}, \qquad (1 + \bar{\mathbf{D}})A_{\alpha\beta} = (\Gamma^{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}A_{\alpha\mu}, \qquad (2.2.78)$$
$$\mathbf{D}A_{\mu\beta} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}E^{\alpha}{}_{\beta} \qquad \bar{\mathbf{D}}A_{\alpha\mu} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}E_{\alpha}{}^{\beta}, \qquad (2.2.79)$$

$$\bar{\mathbf{D}}A_{\alpha\mu} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}E_{\alpha}{}^{\beta}, \qquad (2.2.79)$$

$$\mathbf{D}E^{\alpha}{}_{\beta} = -\frac{1}{4} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]}\theta)^{\alpha} \Omega_{\mu\nu,\beta}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}}E_{\alpha}{}^{\beta} = -\frac{1}{4} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]}\bar{\theta})^{\beta} \Omega_{\alpha,\mu\nu}, \qquad (2.2.80)$$

$$\mathbf{D}\Omega_{\mu\nu,\beta} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}\partial_{\nu]}E^{\alpha}{}_{\beta}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}}\Omega_{\alpha,\mu\nu} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}\partial_{\nu]}E_{\alpha}{}^{\beta}, \tag{2.2.81}$$

$$(1+\mathbf{D})A_{\alpha\nu} = (\Gamma^{\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}A_{\mu\nu}, \qquad (1+\bar{\mathbf{D}})A_{\nu\beta} = (\Gamma^{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}A_{\nu\mu}, \qquad (2.2.82)$$

$$\mathbf{D}A_{\mu\nu} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}E_{\nu}^{\alpha}, \qquad \quad \mathbf{\bar{D}}A_{\nu\mu} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}\bar{E}_{\nu}^{\beta}, \qquad (2.2.83)$$

$$\mathbf{D}E^{\alpha}_{\mu_{1}} = -\frac{1}{4} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]}\theta)^{\alpha} \Omega_{\mu\nu,\mu_{1}}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}}\bar{E}^{\beta}_{\mu_{1}} = -\frac{1}{4} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]}\bar{\theta})^{\beta} \Omega_{\mu_{1},\mu\nu}, \qquad (2.2.84)$$
$$\mathbf{D}\Omega_{\mu\nu,\mu_{1}} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}\partial_{\nu]}E^{\alpha}_{\mu_{1}}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}}\Omega_{\mu_{1},\mu\nu} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}\partial_{\nu]}\bar{E}^{\beta}_{\mu_{1}}, \qquad (2.2.85)$$

$$(1 + \mathbf{D})E_{\alpha}^{\ \beta} = (\Gamma^{\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}E_{\mu}^{\beta}, \qquad (1 + \bar{\mathbf{D}})E^{\alpha}{}_{\beta} = (\Gamma^{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}\bar{E}_{\mu}^{\alpha}, \qquad (2.2.86)$$
$$\mathbf{D}E_{\mu}^{\beta} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}P^{\alpha\beta}, \qquad \bar{\mathbf{D}}\bar{E}_{\mu}^{\alpha} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}P^{\alpha\beta}, \qquad (2.2.87)$$

$$^{\beta}, \qquad \bar{\mathbf{D}}\bar{E}^{\alpha}_{\mu} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}P^{\alpha\beta}, \qquad (2.2.87)$$

$$\mathbf{D}P^{\alpha\beta} = -\frac{1}{4} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]}\theta)^{\alpha} C^{\beta}{}_{\mu\nu}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}}P^{\alpha\beta} = -\frac{1}{4} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]}\bar{\theta})^{\beta} \bar{C}^{\alpha}{}_{\mu\nu}, \qquad (2.2.88)$$
$$\mathbf{D}C^{\beta}{}_{\mu\nu} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}\partial_{\nu]}P^{\alpha\beta}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}}\bar{C}^{\alpha}{}_{\mu\nu} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}\partial_{\nu]}P^{\alpha\beta}, \qquad (2.2.89)$$

$$(\Gamma_{[\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}\partial_{\nu]}P^{\alpha\beta}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}}\bar{C}^{\alpha}{}_{\mu\nu} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}\partial_{\nu]}P^{\alpha\beta}, \qquad (2.2.89)$$

(2.2.90)

$$(1+\mathbf{D})\Omega_{\alpha,\mu_{1}\nu} = (\Gamma^{\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}\Omega_{\mu,\mu_{1}\nu}, \qquad (1+\bar{\mathbf{D}})\Omega_{\mu\nu,\alpha} = (\Gamma^{\mu_{1}}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}\Omega_{\mu\nu,\mu_{1}}, \qquad (2.2.91)$$

$$\mathbf{D}\Omega_{\mu,\mu_{1}\nu} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}C^{\alpha}{}_{\mu_{1}\nu}, \qquad \quad \mathbf{\bar{D}}\Omega_{\mu_{1}\nu,\mu} = (\Gamma_{\mu}\bar{\theta})_{\beta}\bar{C}^{\beta}{}_{\mu_{1}\nu}, \qquad (2.2.92)$$

$$\mathbf{D}C^{\alpha}{}_{\mu_{1}\nu_{1}} = -\frac{1}{4} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]}\theta)^{\alpha} S_{\mu\nu,\mu_{1}\nu_{1}}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}}\bar{C}^{\beta}{}_{\mu_{1}\nu_{1}} = -\frac{1}{4} (\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]}\bar{\theta})^{\beta} S_{\mu_{1}\nu_{1},\mu\nu}, \qquad (2.2.93)$$

$$\mathbf{D}S_{\mu\nu,\mu_{1}\nu_{1}} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\theta)_{\alpha}\partial_{\nu]}C^{\alpha}{}_{\mu_{1}\nu_{1}}, \quad \mathbf{D}S_{\mu_{1}\nu_{1}\mu\nu_{n}} = -(\Gamma_{[\mu}\theta)_{\beta}\partial_{\nu]}C^{\beta}{}_{\mu_{1}\nu_{1}}.$$
(2.2.94)

Here operators  $\mathbf{D}$  and  $\mathbf{\bar{D}}$  are given as

$$\mathbf{D} \equiv \theta^{\alpha} \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta^{\alpha}}, \quad \bar{\mathbf{D}} \equiv \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \frac{\partial}{\partial \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}} \tag{2.2.95}$$

Every superfield appears in two groups of equation, reason for this is that both  $\theta$  and  $\bar{\theta}$ components of the field need to be fixed. Inside each group there is iterative structure [34, 35] which allows us to solve field equations recursively for any initial conditions. Furthermore, there is hierarchical structure that governs these equations, making it possible to solve them subsequently. Solutions to these equations produce fields that can be transcribed as expansions in fermionic coordinates  $\theta^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$ . We will be utilize equations of motion for background fields again in Chapter 5, where we will be discussing initial conditions that correspond to coordinate dependent Ramond-Ramond field  $P^{\alpha\beta}$ .

# 2.3 T-duality

We have briefly touched upon naming convention for type IIB supersrings in previous chapter, where we explained that II originates from N = 2 supersymmetry and B originates from the chirality that we imposed on spinors. Type IIA is theory with N = 2 supersymmetry were spinors have opposite chirality and Type IIB is theory with N = 2 supersymmetry were spinors have same chirality. We could have chosen to work with some other number of supersymmetry or by having theory which is also invariant to some other symmetry group. By being able to pick and chose with what kind of symmetry we are working, it would be expected that there are infinite many possible string theories. However this statement is not true, there are only five consistent string theories. These theories are: type I, type IIA, type IIB, heterotic SO(32)and heterotic  $E_8 \times E_8$  string theories.

No matter what superstring theory we are working with, they all only make sense if we work in ten dimensional space-time. From our everyday experience it is obvious that our reality has three spatial and one time dimension, this disparity between reality and theory forces us to find a way to deal with six extra spatial dimensions. One way to make string theory comply with observations is by curling up excess dimensions, where they are now circles with radius R. This process is known as compactification [4, 5, 6, 7, 8].

By compactifying dimensions there is emergence of new kind of symmetry, symmetry that connects theories where radii of compactification is R with ones where it is 1/R. However this is not all, this symmetry also connects different types of superstrings. We call this symmetry T-duality [36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41]. In addition to T-duality, string theory is also invariant under S-duality which connects theories where constant of interaction is  $\alpha$  with ones where it is  $1/\alpha$ [42]. By working in tandem these two dualities connect every possible superstring theory. This has given rise to speculation that there exists one theory, M theory, which works in eleven dimensional space-time from which all other types of superstrings stem. At the time of writing of this thesis, there has not been much progress in obtaining this elusive theory.

Our interest in T-duality comes from the wish to examine non-commutative properties of closed strings. Since this duality connects different types of string theory, our idea is to have one theory with standard Poisson brackets which we dualize and see what are the Poisson brackets of dual theory. In order to be successful in this task it would be helpful to devise procedure which would streamline this whole process. Fortunately, such procedure already exists and it is called Buscher procedure [36, 43, 44, 45]. While understanding of procedure is best accomplished by working on concrete examples, we would like to briefly present main steps this procedure entails.

# 2.3.1 Busher procedure

Idea that lies in the hearth of Buscher procedure is localization of some isometry direction, usually shift symmetry. Therefore, first step in procedure entails testing if the action is invariant under global translations

$$S = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \mathcal{L}(x, \partial x), \quad \delta x^{\mu} = \lambda^{\mu} \quad \to \quad \delta S = 0.$$
 (2.3.96)

Localization of symmetry is accomplished by substituting partial derivatives  $\partial x^{\mu}$  with covari-

### 2.3. T-duality

ant ones  $Dx^{\mu}$ . In case where we have coordinates that do not appear under partial derivatives, typically when we have coordinate dependent background fields, we also need to introduce invariant coordinate  $x^{inv}$  [46, 44, 47, 48]. Inclusion of invariant coordinate separates standard form generalized Buscher procedure [46, 44, 45, 49, 50].

$$\partial_m x^\mu \to D_m x^\mu = \partial_m x^\mu + v_m^\mu, \quad x^{inv} = \int_P d^m \xi D_m x^\mu, \quad S = \int_\Sigma d^2 \xi \mathcal{L}(x^{inv}, Dx).$$
 (2.3.97)

Introduction of covariant derivatives has inevitably introduced additional gauge fields  $v^{\mu}$  into the theory. Since we demand that starting theory and T-dual one have same number of degrees of freedom we need to eliminate excess degrees of freedom. This is accomplished by introducing following term with Lagrange multiplier

$$S_{add} = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi y_{\mu} \epsilon^{mn} \partial_m v_n^{\mu}, \qquad (2.3.98)$$

where  $y_{\mu}$  is Lagrange multiplier and  $\epsilon^{mn}$  is world-sheet Levi Civita tensor.

Next step in procedure is utilization of gauge freedom to fix translation symmetry, this way action becomes only function of gauge fields and Lagrange multipliers

$$S + S_{add} = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \mathcal{L}(x, \partial x, y, v \partial v), \quad x(\xi) = constant \quad \rightarrow \quad S + S_{add} = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \mathcal{L}(y, v, \partial v)$$
(2.3.99)

Finally, last step focuses on finding equations of motion for gauge fields and Lagrange multipliers. First set of equations of motion, when inserted into gauge fixed action produces T-dual action, which is now only function of Lagrange multipliers and their derivatives. Inserting equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers into gauge fixed action eliminates all changes we made in previous steps and brings us back to the start. By combining these two sets of equations of motion we can obtain T-dual transformation laws, laws that connect starting coordinates with their T-dual counterparts.

It should be noted that this procedure can be applicable even to cases when we do not have translational symmetry [45]. This is accomplished by substituting starting action with one that has translation symmetry, form of this new action is the same as the form of action where we introduced covariant derivatives, invariant coordinates, Lagrange multipliers and fixed gauge. Legality of this step is assured only if we are able to salvage original action by inserting solutions to equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers into its substitute. It is also important to say that, in cases where we deal with invariant coordinate, we are essentially switching from local theory to non-local one. Recently non-locality has been become very important issue in the quantum mechanical considerations [53].

Having gained some insight into how Buscher procedure works, in the next chapters we will focus on applying this procedure to different types of string theory.

# 3. T-duality of closed bosonic string with H-flux

This chapter is based on work done in paper [54]

It has been know for some time now that non-commutativity can emerge in context of string theory [52, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65], however this emergence was only in the context of open string theory with constant background field. Geometric properties of open strings, their "openness", gave rise to boundary conditions that must be imposed as canonical constraints. In order for these constraints to be consistent we are led to equations that describe boundary conditions as functions of  $\sigma$  world-sheet coordinate. By solving these equations we find interesting conclusion, we can express initial coordinates of the theory as linear combinations of effective coordinates and effective momenta. Imposing standard Poisson brackets between effective coordinates and effective momenta, we find that coordinates of initial theory do not commute. This kind of non-commutativity is known as "canonical non-commutativity" and it is not only exclusive to the string theory. In fact canonical non-commutativity can trace it's origins to Yang-Mills theories [66, 67, 68, 69].

Because of their open nature, open strings have one additional peculiar property and that is the existence of gauge fields at their endpoints [70]. This fact combined with property of non-commutativity creates a natural bridge between string theory and non-commutative Yang-Mills theories. Where examining properties of non-commutative quantum field theory (renormalization [71]) or even obtaining experimental proof of particle decays that are unique to these theories [72, 73] would allow us to give more credence to the idea of one large encompassing theory, string theory.

On the other hand, closed strings do not posses the benefits of their open counterparts. Their lack of borders forces us to be more creative in order to extract any kind of noncommutative behaviour. Due to their geometric restriction, one interesting idea emerges why not examine closed strings in coordinate dependent background fields and instead of finding dependence of initial coordinates on effective coordinates and momenta we find dependence of T-dual coordinates on starting coordinates and momenta? While this idea is not new [10, 14, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83] and in fact case that is disscused in this chapter has already been examined in [14], in order to obtain non-commutative T-dual theory authors had to utilize combination of standard Buscher procedure and nontrivial winding conditions. Our goal is to accomplish the same thing by focusing only on T-duality. T-duality from one theory to another establishes link between coordinates of theories, this link with combination of canonical momenta of original theory makes it possible to write T-dual coordinate as combination of initial coordinates and momenta. By finding Poisson brackets between T-dual coordinates and by enforcing standard Poisson bracket structure on original theory fascinating result emerges, T-dual coordinates of closed bosonic string do not commute.

It should be noted that although these two types of non-commutativity are dominant in string theory, there is one additional type of non-commutativity present in physics. This third type of non-commutativity is based on Lie algebras, where commutator between two coordinates is proportional to coordinate. This kind of non-commutativity is encapsulated in  $\kappa$ -Minkowski space-time [84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89]. While  $\kappa$ -Minkowski space-time is non-commutative, this behaviour is more of the outlier than norm. In general if we have that commutator of coordinates is proportional to linear combination of coordinates, then we expect space to be non-associative because jacobiator and associator would be nonzero. These kind of spaces are closely linked with  $L_{\infty}$  algebras [90].

In this chapter we focus on obtaining T-dual theory, T-dual transofrmation laws and T-dual non-commutativity of simplest possible theory with coordinate dependent background fields, three torus with H flux. To be more precise, we will deal with bosonic string theory where spacetime metric is constant and Kalb-Ramond field has only one non-zero component  $B_{xy} = Hz$ which depends linearly on z coordinate with infinitesimal proportionality constant H. Like we said, this case has been examined before however we will depart from conventional method by utilizing Buscher procedure throughout all chapter. Since standard Buscher procedure applies only to isometry directions on which background fields do not depend, we will utilize combination of standard and generalized procedure in order to obtain T-dual theory.

While this theory is quite simple, it's usefulness comes from just that. It is a good testing ground for some basic ideas before embarking on more complex case.

# 3.1 Three torus with *H*-flux - choice of background fields

We begin with action for closed bosonic string in the presence of the space-time metric  $G_{\mu\nu}(x)$ , Kalb-Ramond antisymmetric field  $B_{\mu\nu}(x)$ , and dilaton scalar field  $\Phi(x)$  where action is given as

$$S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \sqrt{-g} \left\{ \left[ \frac{1}{2} g^{mn} G_{\mu\nu}(x) + \frac{\epsilon^{mn}}{\sqrt{-g}} B_{\mu\nu}(x) \right] \partial_m x^\mu \partial_n x^\nu + \Phi(x) R^{(2)} \right\},$$
(3.1.1)

where notation is indetical to one in Chapter 2.1, that is,  $\Sigma$  is the world-sheet surface parameterized by  $\xi^m = (\tau, \sigma) \ [(m = 0, 1), \sigma \in (0, \pi)]$ , while the D-dimensional space-time os spanned by the coordinates  $x^{\mu}$  ( $\mu = 0, 1, 2, ..., D - 1$ ). Intrinsic world-sheet metric is labeled with  $g_{mn}$ and its corresponding scalar curvature is given as  $R^{(2)}$ .

We have seen in previous chapter that background fields for bosonic string must obey following equations of motion (here presented again for sake of clarity) [16]

### 3. T-duality of closed bosonic string with H-flux

$$\beta_{\mu\nu}^{G} \equiv R_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{4} B_{\mu\rho\sigma} B_{\nu}^{\rho\sigma} + 2D_{\mu} a_{\nu} = 0, \qquad (3.1.2)$$

$$\beta^{B}_{\mu\nu} \equiv D_{\rho}B^{\rho}_{\mu\nu} - 2a_{\rho}B^{\rho}_{\mu\nu} = 0, \qquad (3.1.3)$$

$$\beta^{\Phi} \equiv 2\pi\kappa \frac{D-26}{6} - R - \frac{1}{24} B_{\mu\rho\sigma} B^{\mu\rho\sigma} - D_{\mu}a^{\mu} + 4a^2 = c, \qquad (3.1.4)$$

where we had that c is an arbitrary constant and function  $\beta^{\Phi}$  could also be set to a constant because of the relation

$$D^{\nu}\beta^G_{\nu\mu} + \partial_{\mu}\beta^{\Phi} = 0. \tag{3.1.5}$$

Further, we also had that  $R_{\mu\nu}$  and  $D_{\mu}$  are Ricci tensors and covariant derivative with respect to the space-time metric  $G_{\mu\nu}$ , while

$$B_{\mu\nu\rho} = \partial_{\mu}B_{\nu\rho} + \partial_{\nu}B_{\rho\mu} + \partial_{\rho}B_{\mu\nu}, \quad a_{\mu} = \partial_{\mu}\Phi, \qquad (3.1.6)$$

were field strength for Kalb-Ramond field  $B_{\mu\nu}$  and dilaton gradient, respectively. Simplest solution to these equations is when all three background fields are set to constants, however this case does not provide any new insight into closed string non-commutativity. Case that we will be examining in this chapter is one where every background field, except Kalb-Ramond field, is set to constant. For Kalb-Ramond field we want to have linear coordinate dependence. In order to see if our wishes are consistent with reality, we should examine equations of motion for background fields more closely. By setting dilaton field to constant and demanding linear coordinate dependence for Kalb-Ramond tensor, first equation (3.1.2) reduces to

$$R_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{4} B_{\mu\rho\sigma} B_{\nu}^{\rho\sigma} = 0, \qquad (3.1.7)$$

where field strength  $B_{\mu\nu\rho}$  is constant. If we additionally assume that this is infinitesimal constant H, then we are free to set space-time metric  $G_{\mu\nu}$  also to a constant in approximation linear in  $B_{\mu\nu\rho}$ . These assumptions satisfy all three space-time field equations, where the third equation (3.1.4) takes following form

$$2\pi\kappa \frac{D-26}{6} = c.$$
 (3.1.8)

This expression allows us to chose the number of dimensions we want to work in. In order to explore main properties of closed bosonic string in presence of coordinate dependent background fields and in order to not make calculations needlessly complicated we will work in D = 3 dimensions with the following choice of background fields

$$G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} R_1^2 & 0 & 0\\ 0 & R_2^2 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & R_3^2 \end{pmatrix}, \quad B_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & Hz & 0\\ -Hz & 0 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$
 (3.1.9)

Here  $R_{\mu}$  ( $\mu = 1, 2, 3$ ) are radii of the compact dimensions. This configuration of background fields, while simple it is not arbitrary, it represents geometry of torus with flux (field strength)

### 3.2. T-dualization of bosonic closed string action

H [51]. Our choice of infinitesimal flux H can be understood in terms of the radii as

$$\left(\frac{H}{R_1 R_2 R_3}\right)^2 = 0. \tag{3.1.10}$$

Since H is infinitesimal this means that flux is "diluted" and that our torus is large. This gives us the freedom to rescale the coordinates

$$x^{\mu} \mapsto \frac{x^{\mu}}{R_{\mu}},\tag{3.1.11}$$

which simplifies the form of the metric even more

$$G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$
 (3.1.12)

With this configuration of background fields, action for closed string takes following form

$$S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu}$$
  
=  $\kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \partial_{+} x \partial_{-} x + \partial_{+} y \partial_{-} y + \partial_{+} z \partial_{-} z \right) + \partial_{+} x H z \partial_{-} y - \partial_{+} y H z \partial_{-} x \right], \qquad (3.1.13)$ 

where we have transcribed action into light-cone coordinates (more detail in Appendix A). Metric tensor  $G_{\mu\nu}$  and Kalb-Ramond antisymmetric tensor  $B_{\mu\nu}$  are combined into new tensor  $\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = B_{\mu\nu} \pm \frac{1}{2}G_{\mu\nu}$ . We also took liberty to relable coordinates  $x^{\mu}$  as

$$x^{\mu} = \begin{pmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{pmatrix}. \tag{3.1.14}$$

T-dualization of dilaton field is performed separately within quantum formalism, since that is not the focus of this thesis from now on we will omit the term containing this field.

# 3.2 T-dualization of bosonic closed string action

Having established our starting point in previous section, content of this section will be based on obtaining T-dual action and T-dual transformation laws. T-dualization will be performed one direction at the time by utilizing standard and ,when situation demands, generalized Buscher procedures. Results that are obtained here will be used in subsequent section as a way to obtain non-commutative properties of T-dual theory.

# 3.2.1 T-dualization along x direction - from torus with H-flux to twisted torus

We start our T-dualization journey by dualizing action (3.1.13) along x direction. Since this x direction is an isometry direction this means that action possesses global shift symmetry  $x \to x + a$  and since background fields do not depend on this coordinate we can accomplish our goal by utilizing standard Buscher procedure [36]. We will go through all the steps that were highlighted in previous chapter. As it has been already explained, starting point of T-dualization procedure is based on localization of global shift symmetry. This is accomplished by introducing covariant derivatives that will replace partial derivatives

$$\partial_{\pm}x \to D_{\pm}x = \partial_{\pm}x + v_{\pm}, \qquad (3.2.15)$$

where  $v_{\pm}$  are gauge fields that transform as

$$\delta v_{\pm} = -\partial_{\pm} a, \tag{3.2.16}$$

under local translations. By adding term with Lagrange multiplier  $\gamma_1$ 

$$S_{add} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \gamma_1 (\partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+), \qquad (3.2.17)$$

to the action we are making newly added gauge fields unphysical degrees of freedom. After gauge fixing, x = const, the action takes the following form

$$S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( v_+ v_- + \partial_+ y \partial_- y + \partial_+ z \partial_- z \right) + v_+ H z \partial_- y - \partial_+ y H z v_- \right. \\ \left. + \frac{1}{2} \gamma_1 \left( \partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+ \right) \right].$$

$$(3.2.18)$$

We can find equations of motion for Lagrange multiplier  $\gamma_1$  which tell us that field strength for the gauge field  $v_{\pm}$  vanishes

$$F_{+-} = \partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+ = 0. \tag{3.2.19}$$

Solving this equation we obtain following solution for gauge filed

$$v_{\pm} = \partial_{\pm} x. \tag{3.2.20}$$

If we wish to return to original action (3.1.13), we only need to plug these solution into gauge fixed action (3.2.18). Varying the gauge fixed action (3.2.18) with respect to the gauge fields  $v_{+}$  and  $v_{-}$  we obtain following two equations

$$v_{-} = -\partial_{-}\gamma_{1} - 2Hz\partial_{-}y, \qquad (3.2.21)$$

$$v_{+} = \partial_{+}\gamma_{1} + 2Hz\partial_{+}y. \qquad (3.2.22)$$

Utilizing these two expressions in a manner that has been described before and by neglecting all terms that are not linear in H we are left with following T-dual action

$${}_{x}S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \partial_{+} ({}_{x}X)^{\mu}{}_{x}\Pi_{+\mu\nu}\partial_{-} ({}_{x}X)^{\nu}, \qquad (3.2.23)$$

where subscript x denotes quantity obtained after T-dualization along x direction and we have grouped coordinate into

$$_{x}X^{\mu} = \begin{pmatrix} \gamma_{1} \\ y \\ z \end{pmatrix}. \tag{3.2.24}$$

After first T-duality theory has new altered background fields

$${}_{x}\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = {}_{x}B_{\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}{}_{x}G_{\mu\nu},$$
  
$${}_{x}B_{\mu\nu} = 0, \quad {}_{x}G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2Hz & 0\\ 2Hz & 1 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$
 (3.2.25)

These background fields define what is known in literature as a "twisted torus" geometry. String theory after one T-dualization is geometrically well defined both globally and locally. Theory is geometrical where flux H plays the role of connection. Combining the solution of equation of motion for Lagrange multiplier (3.2.20) with equations of motion for gauge fields (3.2.21) and (3.2.22) we get the transformation laws connecting initial coordinates  $x^{\mu}$  with T-dual coordinates  $_{x}X^{\mu}$ 

$$\partial_{\pm}x \cong \pm \partial_{\pm}\gamma_1 \pm 2Hz \partial_{\pm}y, \qquad (3.2.26)$$

where  $\cong$  denotes T-dual relation. The momentum  $\pi_x$  is canonically conjugated to the initial coordinate x. Using the initial action (3.1.13) we get

$$\pi_x = \frac{\delta S}{\delta \dot{x}} = \kappa (\dot{x} - 2Hzy'), \qquad (3.2.27)$$

where, as before, we have denoted  $A \equiv \partial_{\tau} A$  and  $A' \equiv \partial_{\sigma} A$ . Combining transformation laws for light-cone derivatives of x coordinate, we are able to obtain

$$\dot{x} \cong \gamma_1' + 2Hzy', \tag{3.2.28}$$

which when utilized with the expression for momentum  $\pi_x$ , gives us transformation law in canonical form

$$\pi_x \cong \kappa \gamma_1'. \tag{3.2.29}$$

### 3. T-duality of closed bosonic string with H-flux

# **3.2.2** From twisted torus to non-geometrical *Q*-flux

We continue T-dualization by performing T-dualization of action (3.2.23) along y direction. We repeat same procedure from previous subsection and form the gauge fixed action

$${}_{x}S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \partial_{+}\gamma_{1}\partial_{-}\gamma_{1} + v_{+}v_{-} + \partial_{+}z\partial_{-}z \right) + \partial_{+}\gamma_{1}Hzv_{-} + v_{+}Hz\partial_{-}\gamma_{1} + \frac{1}{2}\gamma_{2} \left( \partial_{+}v_{-} - \partial_{-}v_{=} \right) \right].$$

$$(3.2.30)$$

Equations of motion for Lagrange multiplier  $\gamma_2$  produce

$$\partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+ = 0 \to v_\pm = \partial_\pm y. \tag{3.2.31}$$

Inserting these solutions to equations of motion into gauge fixed action it returns to its starting form (3.2.23). By varying the gauge fixed action with respect to the gauge fields we obtain

$$v_{\pm} = \pm \partial_{\pm} \gamma_2 - 2Hz \partial_{\pm} \gamma_1. \tag{3.2.32}$$

Inserting these equations equations into gauge fixed action and by keeping only terms linear in H, we obtain T-dual action

$$_{xy}S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2\xi \partial_+ (_{xy}X)^{\mu}{}_{xy}\Pi_{+\mu\nu}\partial_- (_{xy}X)^{\nu}, \qquad (3.2.33)$$

where

$$(_{xy}X)^{\mu} = \begin{pmatrix} \gamma_1 \\ \gamma_2 \\ z \end{pmatrix}, \qquad (3.2.34)$$

$$_{xy}\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = _{xy}B_{\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}{}_{xy}G_{\mu\nu}, \quad _{xy}\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{1}{2} & -Hz & 0\\ Hz & \frac{1}{2} & 0\\ 0 & 0 & \frac{1}{2} \end{pmatrix}.$$
 (3.2.35)

Separating tensor  $_{xy}\Pi_{+\mu\nu}$  into its constituent fields we obtain following expressions for background fields

$${}_{xy}B_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -Hz & 0 \\ Hz & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = -B_{\mu\nu}, \quad {}_{xy}G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$
(3.2.36)

Background fields that we obtained after two successive T-dualizations resemble background fields of the starting theory, torus with H-flux, but they should only be considered locally. Their global properties are nontrivial and, because of this, the term "non-geometry" was introduced. This configuration of fields is known as torus with Q-flux.

Combining the equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers  $y_2$  and equations of motion for gauge fields  $v_{\pm}$  we can deduce T-dual transformation laws

$$\partial_{\pm} y \cong \pm \partial_{\pm} \gamma_2 - 2Hz \partial_{\pm} \gamma_1. \tag{3.2.37}$$

### 3.2. T-dualization of bosonic closed string action

In order to obtain canonical form of transformation laws we again need to find canonical momentum. This time of y coordinate

$$\pi_y = \frac{\delta S}{\delta \dot{y}} = \kappa (\dot{y} + 2Hzx'). \tag{3.2.38}$$

Adding the transformation laws (3.2.37) for  $\partial_+ y$  and  $\partial_- y$  together and utilizing properties of light-cone derivatives, we obtain

$$\dot{y} \cong \gamma_2' - 2Hz\dot{\gamma_1},\tag{3.2.39}$$

Combining this expression with one for momentum  $\pi_y$  we obtain transformation law in canonical form

$$\pi_y \cong \kappa \gamma_2'. \tag{3.2.40}$$

Having obtained two separate transformation laws in canonical form (3.2.29), (3.2.40) we can notice that T-dual coordinates  $\gamma_1$  and  $\gamma_2$  are still commutative. This is a consequence of a simple fact that variables of initial theory, which is geometrical one, satisfy standard Poisson algebra

$$\{x^{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = \delta^{\mu}_{\nu}\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \quad \{x^{\mu}, x^{\nu}\} = \{\pi_{\mu}, \pi_{\nu}\} = 0, \quad (3.2.41)$$

where

$$\pi_{\mu} = \begin{pmatrix} \pi_x \\ \pi_y \\ \pi_z \end{pmatrix}. \tag{3.2.42}$$

# **3.2.3** From Q to R-flux - T-dualization along z coordinate

Having dualized starting action along both x and y direction, we are left only with T-dualization along z direction. Since background Kalb-Ramond field depends on this coordinate we will utilize generalized T-dualization procedure [46, 44, 45, 49, 50].

Starting point is the action we obtained after performing T-dualization along x and y coordinates (3.2.33). Since Kalb-Ramond field depends on z it seems that we are lacking isometry along z. However this is not the case, action is indeed invariant under global shift transformations of z coordinate. To see this let us assume for a moment that Kalb-Ramond field linearly depends on all coordinates  $B_{\mu\nu} = b_{\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{3}B_{\mu\nu\rho}x^{\rho}$  and check if some global transformation can be treated as isometry one. We start with global shift transformation

$$\delta x^{\mu} = \lambda^{\mu}, \tag{3.2.43}$$

and make a variation of action

$$\delta S = \frac{\kappa}{3} B_{\mu\nu\rho} \lambda^{\mu} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial_+ x^{\mu} \partial_- x^{\nu} = \frac{2\kappa}{3} B_{\mu\nu\rho} \lambda^{\mu} \epsilon^{mn} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \partial_m (x^{\mu} \partial_n x^{\nu}) - x^{\mu} (\partial_m \partial_n x^{\nu}) \right]. \quad (3.2.44)$$

The second term vanishes explicitly due to contraction of antisymmetric tensor  $\epsilon^{mn}$  and  $(\partial_m \partial_n)$  tensor, while the first term is surface one and in general this term is different from zero. However, expression for  $\delta S$  is topological invariant and if we have topologically trivial map from world-sheet onto *D*-dimensional space-time this expression is set to zero. This means that

### 3. T-duality of closed bosonic string with H-flux

properties of field strength H do not play a role in ensuring our action has invariance under shift symmetry.

There is one additional, although more technical, explanation for vanishment of surface term which is more appropriate to the approximations used in this chapter. Because we chose to work in linear approximation of H terms, we have that our coordinates  $x^{\mu}$  satisfy  $\partial_{+}\partial_{-}x^{\mu} = 0$ equations of motion for constant  $G_{\mu\nu}$  and  $B_{\mu\nu}$  whose solutions are well documented in standard string theory textbooks. From these solutions we have that, if we hold initial  $\tau_i$  and final  $\tau_f$  fixed and if we work with trivial winding conditions (winding number is set to zero), coordinates  $x^{\mu}$ satisfy  $x^{\mu}(\sigma + 2\pi) = x^{\mu}(\sigma)$  which ensures disappearance of surface term. Consequently in the case of constant metric and linearly dependent Kalb-Ramon field, global shift transformation is an isometry transformation. This means that we can make T-dualization along z coordinate using generalized T-dualization procedure.

As has been described in previous chapter, difference between generalized [46] and standard Buscher procedure is only in one additional step seen in the introduction of invariant coordinate. We again start by localizing shift symmetry of the action (3.2.33) and by introducing covariant derivative

$$\partial_{\pm}z \to D_{\pm}z = \partial_{\pm}z + v_{\pm}. \tag{3.2.45}$$

Now into play comes introduction of invariant coordinate as line integral

$$z^{inv} = \int_P d\xi^m D_m z = \int_P d\xi^+ D_+ z + \int_P d\xi^- D_- z = z(\xi) - z(\xi_0) + \Delta V, \qquad (3.2.46)$$

where

$$\Delta V = \int_{P} d\xi^{m} v_{m} = \int_{P} (d\xi^{+} v_{+} + d\xi^{-} v_{-}). \qquad (3.2.47)$$

Here  $\xi$  and  $\xi_0$  are the current and initial point of the world-sheet line P. At the end, as in the standard Buscher Procedure, in order to make  $v_{\pm}$  unphysical degrees of freedom we add to the action term with Lagrange multiplier

$$S_{add} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \gamma_3 (\partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+). \tag{3.2.48}$$

With these additions final form of action is

$$xy\bar{S} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \partial_{+}\gamma_{1}\partial_{-}\gamma_{1} + \partial_{+}\gamma_{2}\partial_{-}\gamma_{2} + D_{+}zD_{-}z \right) - Hz^{inv} \left( \partial_{+}\gamma_{1}\partial_{-}\gamma_{2} - \partial_{+}\gamma_{2}\partial_{-}\gamma_{1} \right) \right.$$

$$\left. + \frac{1}{2}\gamma_{3} \left( \partial_{+}v_{-} - \partial_{-}v_{+} \right) \right].$$

$$(3.2.49)$$

Because of the existing shift symmetry we fix the gauge,  $z(\xi) = z(\xi_0)$ , and then the gauge fixed action takes the form

$$_{xy}S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \partial_{+}\gamma_{1}\partial_{-}\gamma_{1} + \partial_{+}\gamma_{2}\partial_{-}\gamma_{2} + v_{+}v_{-} \right) - H\Delta V (\partial_{+}\gamma_{1}\partial_{-}\gamma_{2} - \partial_{+}\gamma_{2}\partial_{-}\gamma_{1}) \right.$$

$$\left. + \frac{1}{2}\gamma_{3}(\partial_{+}v_{-} - \partial_{-}v_{+}) \right].$$

$$(3.2.50)$$

#### 3.2. T-dualization of bosonic closed string action

Equation of motion for Lagrange multiplier  $\gamma_3$  gives us

$$\partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+ = 0 \rightarrow v_\pm = \partial_\pm z, \quad \Delta V = \Delta z,$$
(3.2.51)

while equations of motion for gauge fields  $v_{\pm}$  are

$$v_{\pm} = \pm \partial_{\pm} \gamma_3 - 2\beta^{\mp}, \qquad (3.2.52)$$

functions  $\beta^{\pm}$  are defined as

$$\beta^{\pm} = \pm \frac{1}{2} H(\gamma_1 \partial_{\mp} \gamma_2 - \gamma_2 \partial_{\mp} \gamma_1). \tag{3.2.53}$$

These functions are obtained as a result of the variation of the term containing  $\Delta V$  (more detail in Appendix C)

$$\delta_v \left( -2\kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \epsilon^{mn} H \partial_m \gamma_1 \partial_n \gamma_2 \Delta V \right) = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi (\beta^+ \delta v_+ + \beta^- \delta v_-), \qquad (3.2.54)$$

using partial integration and the fact that  $\partial_{\pm}V = v_{\pm}$ . Inserting these relations into gauge fixed action and again keeping only terms that are linear in H, we obtain T-dual action

$$_{xyz}S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial_+ (_{xyz}X)^{\mu}{}_{xyz}\Pi_{+\mu\nu}\partial_- (_{xyz}X)^{\nu}, \qquad (3.2.55)$$

where

$$_{xyz}x^{\mu} = \begin{pmatrix} \gamma_1 \\ \gamma_2 \\ \gamma_3 \end{pmatrix}, \quad _{xyz}\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = _{xyz}B_{\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}{}_{xyz}G_{\mu\nu}, \qquad (3.2.56)$$

$${}_{xyz}B_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -H\Delta V & 0\\ H\Delta V & 0 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad {}_{xyz}G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0\\ 0 & 1 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$
(3.2.57)

We also introduce double coordinate

$$\partial_{\pm}\gamma_3 \equiv \pm \partial_{\pm}\bar{\gamma}_3. \tag{3.2.58}$$

One thing to note is that  $\Delta V$  never stands alone it is always accompanied by field strength H, which implies that, according to the diluted flux approximation, we calculate  $\Delta V$  in zeroth order in H

$$\Delta V = \int_P d\xi^+ \partial_+ \gamma_3 - \int_P d\xi^- \partial_- \gamma_3 = \Delta \gamma_3. \tag{3.2.59}$$

This expression makes it clear why we defined double coordinate  $\bar{\gamma}_3$  as in Eq. (3.2.58). Presence of  $\Delta V$ , which is defined as line integral, represents the source of non-locality of the T-dual theory. The resoult of three T-dualizations is a theory with R flux. Combining equations of motion for Lagrange multiplier (3.2.51) with equations of motion for gauge fields (3.2.52), we obtain the T-dual transformation law for z coordinate

$$\partial_{\pm} z \cong \pm \partial_{\pm} \gamma_3 - 2\beta^{\mp}. \tag{3.2.60}$$

#### 3. T-duality of closed bosonic string with H-flux

Combining  $\partial_+ z$  and  $\partial_- z$  we get transformation law for  $\dot{z}$ 

$$\dot{z} \cong \gamma_3' + H(\gamma_1 \gamma_2' - \gamma_2 \gamma_1') \tag{3.2.61}$$

which enables us to write down the transformation law in the canonical form

$$\gamma'_3 \cong \frac{1}{k} \pi_z - H(xy' - yx').$$
 (3.2.62)

Here we used the expression for the canonical momentum of the initial theory (3.1.13)

$$\pi_z = \frac{\delta S}{\delta \dot{z}} = \kappa \dot{z}. \tag{3.2.63}$$

# 3.3 Noncommutativity and nonassociativity using T-duality

Having obtained transformation laws in canonical form for all coordinates

$$\gamma_1' \cong \frac{1}{\kappa} \pi_x, \quad \gamma_2' \cong \frac{1}{\kappa} \pi_y \quad \gamma_3' \cong \frac{1}{\kappa} \pi_z - H(xy' - yx'). \tag{3.3.64}$$

we can start analyzing how Poisson brackets of T-dual theory differ from starting one. In order to find the Poisson brackets between T-dual coordinates  $\gamma_{\mu}$ , we will use the algebra of the coordinates and momenta of the initial theory

$$\{x^{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = \delta^{\mu}_{\nu}\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \quad \{x^{\mu}, x^{\nu}\} = \{\pi_{\mu}, \pi_{\nu}\} = 0, \tag{3.3.65}$$

as well as results obtained in Appendix. By examining structure of transformation laws it is obvious that only nontrivial Poisson brackets will be  $\{\gamma_1(\sigma), \gamma_3(\bar{\sigma})\}$  and  $\{\gamma_2(\sigma), \gamma_3(\bar{\sigma})\}$ .

# 3.3.1 Noncommutativity relations

We start by examining Poisson brackets between  $\sigma$  derivatives of T-dual coordinates  $\gamma_{\mu}$  using (3.3.64), where only nontrivial ones are

$$\{\gamma_1'(\sigma), \gamma_3'(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong \frac{2}{\kappa} Hy'(\sigma)\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}) + \frac{1}{\kappa} Hy(\sigma)\delta'(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \qquad (3.3.66)$$

$$\{\gamma_2'(\sigma), \gamma_3'(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong -\frac{2}{\kappa} Hx'(\sigma)\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}) - \frac{1}{\kappa} Hx(\sigma)\delta'(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}).$$
(3.3.67)

We see that these Poisson brackets are of the form (B.0.1), so we can apply the result (B.0.9). Consequently, we get

$$\{\gamma_1(\sigma), \gamma_3(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong -\frac{H}{\kappa} \left[2y(\sigma) - y(\bar{\sigma})\right] \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \qquad (3.3.68)$$

$$\{\gamma_2(\sigma), \gamma_3(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong \frac{H}{\kappa} \left[2x(\sigma) - x(\bar{\sigma})\right] \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \qquad (3.3.69)$$
These two Poisson brackets are zero when  $\sigma = \bar{\sigma}$  and/or field strength H is equal to zero. But if we take that  $\sigma - \bar{\sigma} = 2\pi$  then we have  $\bar{H}(2\pi) = 1$  and it follows

$$\{\gamma_1(\sigma+2\pi),\gamma_3(\sigma)\} \cong -\frac{H}{\kappa} \left[3\pi N_y + y(\sigma)\right], \qquad (3.3.70)$$

$$\{\gamma_2(\sigma+2\pi),\gamma_3(\sigma)\} \cong \frac{H}{\kappa} \left[4\pi N_x + x(\sigma)\right],\tag{3.3.71}$$

where  $N_x$  and  $N_y$  are winding numbers defined as

$$x(\sigma + 2\pi) - x(\sigma) = 2\pi N_x, \quad y(\sigma + 2\pi) - y(\sigma) = 2\pi N_y.$$
(3.3.72)

From these relations we can see that if we chose  $\sigma$  for which  $x(\sigma) = 0$  and  $y(\sigma) = 0$  then noncommutativity relation are proportional to winding numbers. On the other side, even in cases where winding numbers are equal to zero there is still noncommutativity between T-dual coordinates.

## 3.3.2 Nonassociativity

In order to calculate Jacobi identity of the T-dual coordinates we first have to find Poisson brackets  $\{\gamma_1(\sigma), x(\bar{\sigma})\}$  which is presented in Appendix B, here we give only result

$$\{\gamma_2(\sigma), y(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong -\frac{1}{\kappa} \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}).$$
(3.3.73)

The relation for  $\{\gamma_2(\sigma), y(\bar{\sigma})\}\$  is similar because the transformation law for y-direction is of the same form as for x-direction, the Poisson bracket is of the same form. Calculating Jacobi identity by using noncommutativity relations (3.3.68) and (3.3.69) and previous equation we have

$$\{\gamma_{1}(\sigma_{1}), \gamma_{2}(\sigma_{2}), \gamma_{3}(\sigma_{3})\} \equiv \{\gamma_{1}(\sigma_{1}), \{\gamma_{2}(\sigma_{2}), \gamma_{3}(\sigma_{3})\}\} + \{\gamma_{2}(\sigma_{2}), \{\gamma_{3}(\sigma_{3}), \gamma_{1}(\sigma_{1})\}\} + \{\gamma_{3}(\sigma_{3}), \{\gamma_{1}(\sigma_{1}), \gamma_{2}(\sigma_{2})\}\} \\ \cong -\frac{2H}{\kappa^{2}} \Big[ \bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{2})\bar{H}(\sigma_{2} - \sigma_{3}) + \bar{H}(\sigma_{2} - \sigma_{1})\bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{3}) + \bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{3})\bar{H}(\sigma_{3} - \sigma_{2}) \Big].$$

Jacobi identity is nonzero which means that theory with *R*-flux is nonassociative. For  $\sigma_2 = \sigma_3 = \sigma$  and  $\sigma_1 = \sigma + 2\pi$  we get

$$\{\gamma_1(\sigma+2\pi), \gamma_2(\sigma), \gamma_3(\sigma)\} \cong \frac{2H}{\kappa^2}.$$
(3.3.74)

From the last two equations, general form of Jacobi identity and Jacobi identity for special choice of  $\sigma$ 's, we see that presence of the coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramond field is a source of non-commutativity and nonassociativity.

# 4. From H-flux to the family of three nonlocal R-flux theories

This chapter is based on work done in paper [91]

We have seen in previous chapter how T-duality affects theory that describes propagation of bosonic string in presence of coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramond field. T-dualization was performed first along x and y coordinates and finally along coordinate on which background fields depend, that is z coordinate. Result of such chain of T-dualizations was that we had emergence of non-locality and non-commutativity only at the end, after dualizing z coordinate. This posses natural question, could we obtained non-commutativity earlier if we had chosen to follow another T-duality chain? The answer to this question is positive. If we had, for example, conducted T-dualization along xzy chain non-locality as well as non-commutativity would arise after second T-dualization. This fact illuminates new found richness of this simple model, where slight adjustments to T-duality chain give rise to whole new family of theories. It should be noted however that final T-dual theory is unique and that all alternate T-duality chains converge on same final theory which, as we have seen, was non-local and non-commutative.

Focus of this chapter is again on examining closed bosonic string with coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramon field but along alternative T-duality chain, namely zyx chain. This order of dualization will produce non-local theory after first T-duality and subsequent dualizations will give us non-commutative relations. Since background fields depended only on z coordinate, these subsequent dualizations will not affect locality of theory. Just like before, main tools for this endeavour will consist of general and standard Buscher procedure for coordinates z and x/y, respectively.

## 4.1 Preliminary action and background fields

Starting point of this chapter is the same as of the previous one and we will not repeat its contents. We will however, for clarity sake, only list starting action transcribed in light-cone coordinates

$$S = k \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu}$$
  
=  $k \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \partial_{+} x \partial_{-} x + \partial_{+} y \partial_{-} y + \partial_{+} z \partial_{-} z \right) + \partial_{+} x H z \partial_{-} y - \partial_{+} y H z \partial_{-} x \right], \qquad (4.1.1)$ 

#### 4.2. Family of three R-flux non-local theories

as well as starting background fields

$$G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad B_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & Hz & 0 \\ -Hz & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$
 (4.1.2)

Notation is the same as before.  $\Sigma$  denotes world-sheet surface which is parametrized by  $\tau$  and  $\sigma$  world-sheet coordinates or, as in the case of light-cone basis, by  $\xi^+$  and  $\xi^-$ , while space-time coordinates are denoted with x, y and z. Space-time metric tensor  $G_{\mu\nu}$  is constant and antisymmetric Kalb-Ramond tensor  $B_{\mu\nu}$  has infinitesimal linear coordinate dependence on z, both of these tensors combine into tensor  $\Pi_{+\mu\nu}$  as  $\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = B_{\mu\nu} \pm \frac{1}{2}G_{\mu\nu}$ .

## 4.2 Family of three *R*-flux non-local theories

In this section we will perform T-dualization along zyx coordinate chain. After every Tdualization we will write down T-dual transformation laws in canonical form and check if the theory has become non-commutative. Since T-duality procedure is the same as in chapter before, although in reverse, we will omit most details and only focus on main results.

## 4.2.1 T-dualization along z direction - shortcut to R-flux

We have already seen that theories with coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramond field are invariant under global shift symmetry with transformations of type  $x^{\mu} \rightarrow x^{\mu} + \lambda^{\mu}$ , where invariance is guaranteed duo to inherent antisymmetry of tensor as well as by trivial winding conditions. This fact makes it possible to utilize general Buscher procedure in first step of T-dualization.

By substituting partial derivatives with covariant derivatives  $D_{\pm}z$ 

$$\partial_{\pm}z \longrightarrow D_{\pm}z = \partial_{\pm}z + v_{\pm}, \tag{4.2.3}$$

introducing invariant coordinate  $z^{inv}$ 

$$z^{inv} = \int_P d\xi^{\alpha} D_{\alpha} z = \int_P d\xi^+ D_+ z + \int_P d\xi^- D_- z = z(\xi) - z(\xi_0) + \Delta V, \qquad (4.2.4)$$

and adding term with Lagrange multiplier  $\gamma_3$ 

$$S_{add} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \gamma_3 (\partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+) \,. \tag{4.2.5}$$

to the action (4.1.1), as well as utilizing gauge freedom to fix  $z(\xi) = z(\xi_0)$  we obtain gauge fixed action

$$S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ H\Delta V(\partial_{+}x\partial_{-}y - \partial_{+}y\partial_{-}x) + \frac{1}{2}(\partial_{+}x\partial_{-}x + \partial_{+}y\partial_{-}y + v_{+}v_{-}) + \frac{1}{2}\gamma_{3}(\partial_{+}v_{-} - \partial_{-}v_{+}) \right].$$

$$(4.2.6)$$

#### 4. From H-flux to the family of three nonlocal R-flux theories

Here  $\Delta V$  is given as

$$\Delta V = \int_{P} d\xi^{\alpha} v_{\alpha} = \int_{P} (d\xi^{+} v_{+} + d\xi^{-} v_{-}). \qquad (4.2.7)$$

The equation of motion for Lagrange multiplier  $y_3$  obtained from above action (4.2.6) produces

$$\partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+ = 0 \to v_\pm = \partial_\pm z \,, \tag{4.2.8}$$

which drives us back to the initial action (4.1.1). On the other side, if we found equations of motion for gauge fields  $v_{\pm}$ , we get

$$v_{\pm} = \pm \partial_{\pm} \gamma_3 - 2\beta^{\mp} \,, \tag{4.2.9}$$

where  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions are obtained in exactly the same way as before however, they are now functions of initial coordinates x and y instead of T-dual ones and we do not need to make and substitutions

$$\beta^{\pm} = \mp \frac{1}{2} H(x \partial_{\mp} y - y \partial_{\mp} x) \,. \tag{4.2.10}$$

Plugging equations of motion for gauge fields  $v_{\pm}$  into gauge fixed action and keeping only terms lienar in H, we are let to T-dual action

$${}_{z}S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \partial_{+} ({}_{z}X)^{\mu}{}_{z}\Pi_{+\mu\nu}\partial_{-} ({}_{z}X)^{\nu}, \qquad (4.2.11)$$

where we now have following coordinates and background fields

$$_{z}X^{\mu} = \begin{pmatrix} x \\ y \\ \gamma_{3} \end{pmatrix}, \quad _{z}\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = _{z}B_{\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}{}_{z}G_{\mu\nu}, \qquad (4.2.12)$$

$${}_{z}B_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & H\Delta V & 0 \\ -H\Delta V & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad {}_{z}G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$
(4.2.13)

Since  $\Delta V$  is represented as line integral which is the source of non-locality, we have that this theory is non-local.

By combining solutions to the equation of motion for Lagrange multiplier (4.2.8) with equations of motion for gauge fields (4.2.9) we find T-dual transformation laws

$$\partial_{\pm}z \cong \pm \partial_{\pm}\gamma_3 \mp H(x\partial_{\pm}y - y\partial_{\pm}x). \tag{4.2.14}$$

Finding expression for  $\dot{z}$  and combining it with canonical momentum of z coordinate from original theory

$$\pi_z = \frac{\delta S}{\delta \dot{z}} = \kappa \dot{z}, \qquad (4.2.15)$$

we get canonical transformation law for  $\sigma$  derivative of T-dual coordinate  $\gamma_3$ 

$$\gamma'_{3} \cong \frac{1}{\kappa} \pi_{z} + H(xy' - yx'),$$
(4.2.16)

which is of the same form as in the xyz case.

Unlike in previous chapter here we will keep the symbol  $\Delta V$  throughout, instead of introducing double coordinate  $\bar{\gamma}_3$ .

Since we are dealing with exactly the same starting theory, initial coordinates satisfy standard Poisson algebra

$$\{x^{\mu}(\sigma), x^{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = \{\pi_{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = 0, \quad \{x^{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = \delta^{\mu}{}_{\nu}\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \quad (4.2.17)$$

which when utilizes with expression for canonical transformation law (4.2.16) we are led to the conclusion that theory we have just obtained is commutative. As a consequence of this, it also follows that this theory is also associative. While this theory is also theory with R-flux as one we obtained at the end of xyz dualization chain, their commutative properties are different.

## 4.2.2 T-dualization along y direction

Starting from the action that was dualized along z direction (4.2.11), we continue along our Tdualization journey by focusing on y coordinate. In this case background fields are independent of coordinate in question therefore we will apply standard Buscher procedure. In order to not repeat unnecessary steps we immediately introduce gauge fixed action The gauge fixed action is of the form

$${}_{z}S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \partial_{+}x\partial_{-}x + v_{+}v_{-} + \partial_{+}\gamma_{3}\partial_{-}\gamma_{3} \right) + H\Delta V(v_{-}\partial_{+}x - v_{+}\partial_{-}x) \right]$$
(4.2.18)

$$+\frac{1}{2}\gamma_{2}(\partial_{+}v_{-}-\partial_{-}v_{+})\bigg].$$
(4.2.19)

Here solutions to equations for motion of Lagrange multiplier  $\gamma_2$  are

$$v_{\pm} = \partial_{\pm} y, \tag{4.2.20}$$

while the equations of motion for gauge fields are

$$v_{\pm} = \pm \partial_{\pm} \gamma_2 \mp 2H \Delta V \partial_{\pm} x \,. \tag{4.2.21}$$

Inserting the expression for gauge fields (4.2.21) into gauge fixed action (4.2.18), we obtain the T-dual action

$$_{zy}S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \; \partial_+ \; (_{zy}X)^{\mu} \; _{zy}\Pi_{+\mu\nu} \; \partial_- \; (_{zy}X)^{\nu} \,, \qquad (4.2.22)$$

where

$$_{zy}X^{\mu} = \begin{pmatrix} x\\ \gamma_2\\ \gamma_3 \end{pmatrix}, \quad _{zy}\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = _{zy}B_{\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2} _{zy}G_{\mu\nu}, \qquad (4.2.23)$$

$$_{zy}B_{\mu\nu} = 0, \quad _{zy}G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & -2H\Delta V & 0\\ -2H\Delta V & 1 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$
 (4.2.24)

Comparing results from zyx and xyz chain after two successive T-dualizations, we see that fields are different. In fact this configuration of fields does not emerge at any point in previous chapter.

Continuing the procedure by finding canonical momenta of original theory

$$\pi_y = \kappa(\dot{y} + 2Hzx'), \tag{4.2.25}$$

and combining them with transformation laws

$$\partial_{\pm} y \cong \pm \partial_{\pm} \gamma_2 \mp 2H \Delta V \partial_{\pm} x, \qquad (4.2.26)$$

we are left with transformation laws in canonical form

$$\gamma_2' \cong \frac{1}{\kappa} \pi_y. \tag{4.2.27}$$

which are the same as in xyz case.

Having obtained two different transformation laws we can immediately notice that this theory has emergent non-commutative properties. By utilizing standard Poisson algebra (4.2.17) we find new nonzero Poisson bracket

$$\{\gamma_2'(\sigma), \gamma_3'(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong \frac{H}{\kappa} \left[2x'(\sigma)\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}) + x(\sigma)\delta'(\sigma - \bar{\sigma})\right], \qquad (4.2.28)$$

where  $\delta' \equiv \partial_{\sigma} \delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma})$ . If we take following substitutions  $A'(\sigma) = y'_2(\sigma)$ ,  $B'(\bar{\sigma}) = y'_3(\bar{\sigma})$ ,  $U'(\sigma) = \frac{H}{\kappa} 2x'(\sigma)$  and  $V(\sigma) = \frac{H}{\kappa} x(\sigma)$ , we notice that above relation takes the form (B.0.1). Utilizing result (B.0.9) from Appendix B, we find following Poisson bracket

$$\{\gamma_2(\sigma), \gamma_3(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong -\frac{H}{\kappa} \left[2x(\sigma) - x(\bar{\sigma})\right] \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}).$$
(4.2.29)

Examining case where string is winded around compactified coordinate  $\sigma \to \sigma + 2\pi$  and  $\bar{\sigma} \to \sigma$  gives us

$$\{y_2(\sigma+2\pi), y_3(\sigma)\} \cong -\frac{H}{\kappa} [x(\sigma)+4\pi N_x], \qquad (4.2.30)$$

Here  $N_x$  winding number defined exactly the same as in previous chapter (3.3.72). As we can see, the non-commutativity relation (4.2.29) is of  $\kappa$ -Minkowski type. Calculating Jacobi identity, it is straightforward to see that

$$\{x(\sigma_1), \{\gamma_2(\sigma_2), \gamma_3(\sigma_3)\}\} + \{\gamma_2(\sigma_2), \{\gamma_3(\sigma_3), x(\sigma_1)\}\} + \{\gamma_3(\sigma_3), \{x(\sigma_1), \gamma_2(\sigma_2)\}\} \cong 0.$$
(4.2.31)

Because the Jacobiator is zero, we conclude that this R-flux theory is non-commutative but associative.

## 4.2.3 T-dualization along x direction

In this section we finish zyx chain of T-dualization by dualizing remaining x coordinate. Since this section is mostly the same as one for y coordinate we will omit all but most important results.

### 4.2. Family of three R-flux non-local theories

We immediately begin with gauge fixed action obtained from (4.2.22)

$${}_{zy}S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( v_+ v_- + \partial_+ \gamma_2 \partial_- \gamma_2 + \partial_+ \gamma_3 \partial_- \gamma_3 \right) - H\Delta V \left( v_+ \partial_- \gamma_2 + \partial_+ \gamma_2 v_- \right) \right]$$
(4.2.32)

$$+\frac{1}{2}\gamma_{1}(\partial_{+}v_{-}-\partial_{-}v_{+})\Big].$$
(4.2.33)

The equations of motion for Lagrange multiplier produces

$$v_{\pm} = \partial_{\pm} x \,, \tag{4.2.34}$$

while the equations of motion for gauge fields  $v_{\pm}$  give

$$v_{\pm} = \pm \partial_{\pm} \gamma_1 + 2H\Delta V \ \partial_{\pm} \gamma_2 \,. \tag{4.2.35}$$

Inserting expressions for  $v_{\pm}$  into gauge fixed action we get the T-dual action

,

$$_{zyx}S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial_+ (_{zyx}X)^{\mu} _{zyx} \Pi_{+\mu\nu} (_{zyx}X)^{\nu} , \qquad (4.2.36)$$

where

$$_{zyx}X^{\mu} = \begin{pmatrix} \gamma_1 \\ \gamma_2 \\ \gamma_3 \end{pmatrix}, \quad _{zyx}\Pi_{+\mu\nu} = _{zyx}B_{\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2} _{zyx}G_{\mu\nu}, \qquad (4.2.37)$$

$${}_{zyx}B_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -H\Delta V & 0 \\ H\Delta V & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad {}_{zyx}G_{\mu\nu} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$
(4.2.38)

These fields are exactly the same as the ones obtained at the end of xyz dualization, which is expected since T-dual theory is unique.

By combining equations of motion (4.2.35) with solutions for equation of motion of Lagrange multiplier  $\gamma_1$  (4.2.34) and by substituting into this combination canonical momentum of original theory

$$\pi_x = \kappa \dot{x} - 2\kappa H z y', \tag{4.2.39}$$

we are left with the canonical form of the T-dual transformation law

$$\gamma_1' \cong \frac{1}{\kappa} \pi_x \,. \tag{4.2.40}$$

As we see the full set of T-dual transformation laws, (4.2.16), (4.2.27) and (4.2.40), are the same as in previous chapter (3.3.64), up to  $H \rightarrow -H$ . Since T-dualized theory is the same we find same non-commutative

$$\{\gamma_1(\sigma), \gamma_3(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong \frac{H}{\kappa} [2y(\sigma) - y(\bar{\sigma})] \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \qquad (4.2.41)$$

$$\{\gamma_2(\sigma), \gamma_3(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong -\frac{H}{\kappa} \left[2x(\sigma) - x(\bar{\sigma})\right] \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \qquad (4.2.42)$$

#### 4. From H-flux to the family of three nonlocal R-flux theories

and non-associativite relations

$$\{\gamma_{1}(\sigma_{1}), \gamma_{2}(\sigma_{2}), \gamma_{3}(\sigma_{3})\} \equiv \{\gamma_{1}(\sigma_{1}), \{\gamma_{2}(\sigma_{2}), \gamma_{3}(\sigma_{3})\}\} + \{\gamma_{2}(\sigma_{2}), \{\gamma_{3}(\sigma_{3}), \gamma_{1}(\sigma_{1})\}\} + \{\gamma_{3}(\sigma_{3}), \{\gamma_{1}(\sigma_{1}), \gamma_{2}(\sigma_{2})\}\} \\ \cong \frac{2H}{k^{2}} \Big[ \bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{2})\bar{H}(\sigma_{2} - \sigma_{3}) + \bar{H}(\sigma_{2} - \sigma_{1})\bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{3}) + \bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{3})\bar{H}(\sigma_{3} - \sigma_{2}) \Big].$$

which can be obtained from the corresponding ones in xyz case by replacing  $H \rightarrow -H$ .

# 4.3 Quantum aspects of T-dualization in the weakly curved background

Both in this and previous chapter in order to prove isometry of z coordinate and to compute the  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions we assumed the trivial topology and that surface terms, that occur after partial integration, vanish. Now we shift our focus on some quantum features of these problems that manifest in nontrivial topologies. Action that we will examine will be slightly modified, we are still examining bosonic string in presence of constant space-time metric tensor, but this time we take Kalb-Ramond field which depends on all coordinates with infinitesimal field strength. Previously discussed case, torus with H flux, is just a special case of this more general model.

Classic theory that we considered until now contained some problems. They all stem from generalized Buscher procedure which demanded the introduction of invariant coordinate  $x_{inv}^{\mu}$ . Since invariant coordinate is multivalued and in order to prove that the gauged theory and initial one are the same we needed to consider global characteristics. By switching from classical theory to quantum one at higher genus, situation is additionally complicated by holonomies of the world-sheet gauge fields Fortunately, these problems can be resolved in Abelian case in the quantum theory [37, 92, 93].

Starting point of this discussion is partition function for bosonic string in weakly curved background fields

$$Z = \sum_{g=0}^{\infty} \int \mathcal{D}\gamma \mathcal{D}v \, e^{i\frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v \, G^* v + i\kappa \int_{\Sigma} v B[V] v + \frac{i\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v d\gamma}.$$
(4.3.1)

Here by making Wick rotation  $\tau \to -i\tau$ , we multiply term containing the metric tensor  $G_{\mu\nu}$ by *i*, while the terms which contain Kalb-Ramond field  $B_{\mu\nu}$  and Lagrange multiplier  $\gamma_{\mu}$  stay unchanged. Then new form of partition function is

$$Z = \sum_{g=0}^{\infty} \int \mathcal{D}\gamma \mathcal{D}v \, e^{-\frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v \, G^{\star} v + i\kappa \int_{\Sigma} v B[V] v + \frac{i\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v d\gamma}, \qquad (4.3.2)$$

where star represents the Hodge duality operator, while g denotes the genus of manifold. In order to pass main idea across and not be dragged down by index calculus we oped to use differential form notation and omit all space-time indices.

The first step in the calculation process is separation the one form Lagrange multiplier  $d\gamma$  into the exact part  $d\gamma_e$  ( $\gamma_e$  is single valued) and the harmonic part  $\gamma_h$  ( $d\gamma_h = 0 = d^{\dagger}y_h$ )

$$d\gamma = d\gamma_e + \gamma_h. \tag{4.3.3}$$

## 4.3. Quantum aspects of T-dualization in the weakly curved background

For the closed forms the co-exact term  $d^{\dagger}\gamma_{co}$  in the Hodge decomposition is missing.

The path integral (4.3.2) goes over all degrees of freedom including local degrees of freedom as well as the sum over different topologies. According to the (4.3.3), we can split  $\mathcal{D}\gamma$  into part containing path integral over  $\gamma_e$  and the sum over all possible topologically nontrivial states contained in  $\gamma_h$  (marked by  $H_{\gamma}$ )

$$\mathcal{D}\gamma \to \mathcal{D}\gamma_e \sum_{H_\gamma}$$
 (4.3.4)

By integrating over  $\gamma_e$ , and utilizing functional representation of Dirac delta

$$\int \mathcal{D}\xi e^{i\int_{\Sigma}\xi\phi} = \delta(\phi), \qquad (4.3.5)$$

we obtain that field strength vanishes

$$Z = \int \mathcal{D}v \,\delta(dv) \, e^{-\frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v \, G^{\star} v + i\kappa \int_{\Sigma} v B[V] v} \sum_{H_{\gamma}} e^{\frac{i\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v \gamma_{h}}.$$
(4.3.6)

Same way as we had split Lagrange multiplier 1-form, we can split the v 1-form by expressing it as sum of exact, co-exact and the harmonic parts

$$v = dx + d^{\dagger}v_{ce} + v_h,$$
 (4.3.7)

which means that

$$\mathcal{D}v \to \mathcal{D}x\mathcal{D}d^{\dagger}v_{ce}\,dH_v. \tag{4.3.8}$$

The functional integration over harmonic part  $v_h$  drives to the ordinary integration over topologically nontrivial periods (marked by symbol  $H_v$ ). After integration over  $d^{\dagger}v_{ce}$  we get

$$Z = \int \mathcal{D}x dH_v \, e^{-\frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v \, G^* v + i\kappa \int_{\Sigma} v B[V] v} \sum_{H_{\gamma}} e^{\frac{i\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v \gamma_h}.$$
(4.3.9)

The last term in the exponent is responsible for nontrivial holonomies. Eliminating  $v_{ce}$  part, the 1-form v becomes closed and the Riemann bilinear relation becomes usable

$$\int_{\Sigma} v \gamma_h = \sum_{i=1}^{g} \left[ \oint_{a_i} v \oint_{b_i} \gamma_h - \oint_{a_i} \gamma_h \oint_{b_i} v \right].$$
(4.3.10)

The symbols  $a_i, b_i$  (i = 1, 2, ..., g) represent the canonical homology basis for the world-sheet. Because of the periodicity of the Lagrange multiplier y, we have that these periods are just the winding numbers around cycles  $a_i$  and  $b_i$ 

$$N_{a_i} = \oint_{a_i} \gamma_h, \quad N_{b_i} = \oint_{b_i} \gamma_h.$$
(4.3.11)

Denoting the periods with

$$A_i = \oint_{a_i} v, \quad B_i = \oint_{b_i} v, \qquad (4.3.12)$$

#### 4. From H-flux to the family of three nonlocal R-flux theories

and inserting these expressions into 4.3.10

$$\int_{\Sigma} v \gamma_h = \sum_{i=1}^g (N_{b_i} A_i - N_{a_i} B_i), \qquad (4.3.13)$$

the partition function (4.3.9) gets the form

$$Z = \int \mathcal{D}x \, dA_i dB_i e^{-\frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v \, G^* v + i\kappa \int_{\Sigma} v B[V] v} \sum_{N_{a_i}, N_{b_i} \in Z} e^{\frac{i\kappa}{2} \sum_{i=1}^g (N_{b_i} A_i - N_{a_i} B_i)}.$$
 (4.3.14)

The periodic delta function is defined as  $\delta(x) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{inx}$ , which produces

$$Z = \int \mathcal{D}x \, dA_i dB_i \delta(\frac{\kappa}{2} A_i) \delta(\frac{\kappa}{2} B_i) \, e^{-\frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} v \, G^* v + i\kappa \int_{\Sigma} v B[V] v} \,. \tag{4.3.15}$$

It is useful to examine the path dependence of the variable  $V^{\mu}$ , whose form is now

$$V^{\mu}(\xi) = x^{\mu}(\xi) - x^{\mu}(\xi_0) + \int_P v_h^{\mu}.$$
(4.3.16)

Let us consider two paths,  $P_1$  and  $P_2$ , with the same initial  $\xi_0^{\alpha}$  and the final points  $\xi^{\alpha}$ . Now we will subtract from the value of  $V^{\mu}$  along  $P_1$  the value along path  $P_2$  and obtain the integral over closed curve  $P_1P_2^{-1}$  of the harmonic form

$$V^{\mu}[P_1] - V^{\mu}[P_2] = \oint_{P_1 P_2^{-1}} v_h^{\mu}.$$
(4.3.17)

Establishing the homology between the closed curve  $P_1P_2^{-1}$  and curve  $\sum_i [n_i a_i + m_i b_i]$ ,  $(n_i, m_i \in \mathbb{Z})$  we get finally

$$V^{\mu}[P_1] = V^{\mu}[P_2] + \sum_i (n_i A_i^{\mu} + m_i B_i^{\mu}).$$
(4.3.18)

The variable  $V^{\mu}(\xi)$  in classical theory is path dependent if holonomies are nontrivial.

Integrating Eq.(4.3.15) over  $A_i$  and  $B_i$  implies that periods  $A_i$  and  $B_i$  are zero. Consequently

$$v = dx. \tag{4.3.19}$$

The variable  $V^{\mu}$  becomes single valued, and the initial theory is restored

$$Z = \int \mathcal{D}x e^{-\frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} dx \, G^{\star} dx + i\kappa \int_{\Sigma} dx B[x] dx} = \int \mathcal{D}x e^{-\kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial x \Pi_+[x] \bar{\partial}x} \,. \tag{4.3.20}$$

By proving that we could salvage initial theory from gauged fixed action of bosonic string in the weakly curved background in the presence of nontrivial topologies we showed that our choice of coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramond field is consistent with path integral quantization process.

It is useful to compare our examination of this model with similar results. During our work we were using only Abelian isometries with combination of standard and generalized Bushcer procedures. There has been work done in alternate approach, where non-Abelian isometries were considered and only standard Buscher procedure was utilized [94]. There it was showed that spaces with isometry maps to the nonisometry spaces, while in this and previous chapters there was isometry in every T-dualization step. In paper [95], authors also utilized generalized Buscher pocedure with invariant coordinates, however dualization was again conducted along non isometry directions using extension of gauge symmetry. It is also useful to mention that this case can be treated in double space formalism [96]. This way T-duality is represented as rotation in space-time that is spanned by coordinates  $x^{\mu}$  and their dual counterparts  $y_{\mu}$ . Results that are obtained here are in accordance with results we obtained in this and previous chapters.

# 5. Bosonic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-field

## This chapter is based on work done in paper [97]

Having analyzed bosonic string in sufficient detail, we will from now on focus on superstring. In bosonic string case we have seen that emergence of non-commutativity arises from the fact that background fields depended on coordinates. To be more precise, if we had original theory in which background fields depended on one specific coordinate we found out that T-dual theory now has one non-commutative coordinate which is dual to original. Similar situation happens in superstring case although on much more complex stage. While bosonic case had only three fields ( $G_{\mu\nu}$  spacetime-metric,  $B_{\mu\nu}$  Kalb-Ramond field and  $\Phi$  dilaton field) which could depend on space-time coordinates, superstring theory has plethora of fields that can depend both on bosonic and fermionic coordinates, where dependence on fermionic part is given as an expansion. Even through T-duality procedures for obtaining T-dual theories are the same this complexity of fields makes it imposible to get any sensible result for any except simplest configurations. As we shall see, near the end of this thesis, even working with field that has both symmetric and antisymmetric part gives rise to plethora of problems.

In this chapter we will examine T-duality and subsequent non-commutativity of bosonic part of type II superstring in presence of coordinate dependent Ramond-Ramond (RR) field. Coordinate dependence will be linear and based only on bosonic part, furthermore just like in H-flux theory we will set work with infinitesimal coordinate dependent part, but in order to get  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions we will also assume this part is antisymmetric. Motivation for this configuration of background fields comes from Ref. [31, 13] where it has been speculated that this exact configuration will give rise to non-commutativity of fermionic coordinates, where these new fermionic non-commutative relations are expected to be proportional to bosonic coordinates, This hypothesis, if proven true, would suggest that all space-time has underlying fermionic structure. Having seen that in bosonic case non-commutativity arises only in coordinates on which fields in starting theory depend, does this fact prematurely kills this dream? Even through answer to this question is that there are no new fermionic non-commutativity relations (details are in following chapter), without doing calculations the answer is not so obvious. This stems from the fact that, since theory contains two sets of coordinates, we expect that fermionic coordinates emerge in bosonic T-dual transforamtion laws and vice versa.

As we have already said, this chapter will only focus on T-dualization of bosonic part of superstring theory. Method that we will utilized has already been seen in action in dualization of z coordinate, generalized Buscher procedure. Unlike previous case, T-duality here will not be carried one coordinate at the time, we will dualize all bosonic coordinates at once. When we obtain T-dual theory we will carry T-dualization once again to obtain starting theory.

5.1. General type II superstring action and choice of background fields

While this step seems excessive, due to sheer complexity of the theory it is necessary as an additional check that we did not make mistakes during T-dualization. At the end of the chapter, by utulizing T-duality transformation laws, we will examine non-commutativity and non-associativity of the final theory.

## 5.1 General type II superstring action and choice of background fields

We begin by recalling type II superstring action in pure spinor formulation [26, 27, 28, 29] from Chapter 2.2. Also we will give detailed exposition and all needed assumptions before we begin T-dualization.

## 5.1.1 General form of the pure spinor type II superstring action

Sigma model of type IIB superstring has the following form [31]

$$S = S_0 + V_{SG}.$$
 (5.1.1)

This general form of action is expressed as a sum of the part that describes the motion of string in flat background

$$S_0 = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left( \frac{\kappa}{2} \eta_{\mu\nu} \partial_m x^{\mu} \partial_n x^{\nu} \eta^{mn} - \pi_{\alpha} \partial_- \theta^{\alpha} + \partial_+ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \bar{\pi}_{\alpha} \right) + S_{\lambda} + S_{\bar{\lambda}} , \qquad (5.1.2)$$

and part that governs the modifications to the background fields

$$V_{SG} = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi (X^T)^M A_{MN} \bar{X}^N.$$
 (5.1.3)

The terms  $S_{\lambda}$  and  $S_{\bar{\lambda}}$  in (5.1.2) are free-field actions for pure spinors

$$S_{\lambda} = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \omega_{\alpha} \partial_{-} \lambda^{\alpha}, \quad S_{\bar{\lambda}} = \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \bar{\omega}_{\alpha} \partial_{+} \bar{\lambda}^{\alpha}.$$
(5.1.4)

Here,  $\lambda^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\lambda}^{\alpha}$  are pure spinors whose canonically conjugated momenta are  $\omega_{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\omega}_{\alpha}$ , respectively. Pure spinors satisfy pure spinor constraints

$$\lambda^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\lambda^{\beta} = \bar{\lambda}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\bar{\lambda}^{\beta} = 0.$$
(5.1.5)

In general case, vectors  $X^M$  and  $X^N$  as well as a supermatrix  $A_{MN}$  are given by

$$X^{M} = \begin{pmatrix} \partial_{+}\theta^{\alpha} \\ \Pi^{\mu}_{+} \\ d_{\alpha} \\ \frac{1}{2}N^{\mu\nu}_{+} \end{pmatrix}, \quad \bar{X}^{M} = \begin{pmatrix} \partial_{-}\bar{\theta}^{\lambda} \\ \Pi^{\mu}_{-} \\ \bar{d}_{\lambda} \\ \frac{1}{2}\bar{N}^{\mu\nu}_{-} \end{pmatrix}, \quad A_{MN} = \begin{bmatrix} A_{\alpha\beta} & A_{\alpha\nu} & E_{\alpha}^{\ \beta} & \Omega_{\alpha,\mu\nu} \\ A_{\mu\beta} & A_{\mu\nu} & \bar{E}^{\beta}_{\mu} & \Omega_{\mu,\nu\rho} \\ E^{\alpha}_{\ \beta} & E^{\alpha}_{\nu} & P^{\alpha\beta} & C^{\alpha}_{\mu\nu} \\ \Omega_{\mu\nu,\beta} & \Omega_{\mu\nu,\rho} & \bar{C}^{\beta}_{\ \mu\nu} & S_{\mu\nu,\rho\sigma} \end{bmatrix}, \quad (5.1.6)$$

where notation is the same as in Chapter 2.2. The components of matrix  $A_{MN}$  are generally

### 5. Bosonic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-field

functions of  $x^{\mu}$ ,  $\theta^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$ . Components themselves are derived as expansions in powers of  $\theta^{\alpha}$ and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$  (details are presented in Chapter 2.2 and consult [31]). The superfields  $A_{\mu\nu}$ ,  $\bar{E}^{\alpha}_{\mu}$ ,  $E^{\alpha}_{\mu}$  and  $P^{\alpha\beta}$  are known as physical superfields, while superfields that are in the first row and the first column are known as auxiliary because they can be expressed in terms of physical ones [31]. Remaining superfields  $\Omega_{\mu,\nu\rho}$  ( $\Omega_{\mu\nu,\rho}$ ),  $C^{\alpha}{}_{\mu\nu}$  ( $\bar{C}^{\beta}{}_{\mu\nu}$ ) and  $S_{\mu\nu,\rho\sigma}$ , are curvatures (field strengths) for physical superfields. Components of vectors  $X^{M}$  and  $\bar{X}^{N}$  are defined as

$$\Pi^{\mu}_{+} = \partial_{+}x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{2}\theta^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\partial_{+}\theta^{\beta}, \quad \Pi^{\mu}_{-} = \partial_{-}x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\Gamma^{\mu})_{\alpha\beta}\partial_{-}\bar{\theta}^{\beta}, \tag{5.1.7}$$

$$d_{\alpha} = \pi_{\alpha} - \frac{1}{2} (\Gamma_{\mu} \theta)_{\alpha} \left[ \partial_{+} x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{4} (\theta \Gamma^{\mu} \partial_{+} \theta) \right],$$
  
$$\bar{d}_{\alpha} = \bar{\pi}_{\alpha} - \frac{1}{2} (\Gamma_{\mu} \bar{\theta})_{\alpha} \left[ \partial_{-} x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{4} (\bar{\theta} \Gamma^{\mu} \partial_{-} \bar{\theta}) \right], \qquad (5.1.8)$$

$$N^{\mu\nu}_{+} = \frac{1}{2}\omega_{\alpha}(\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]})^{\alpha}{}_{\beta}\lambda^{\beta}, \quad \bar{N}^{\mu\nu}_{-} = \frac{1}{2}\bar{\omega}_{\alpha}(\Gamma^{[\mu\nu]})^{\alpha}{}_{\beta}\bar{\lambda}^{\beta}.$$
(5.1.9)

The world sheet  $\Sigma$  is parameterized by  $\xi^m = (\xi^0 = \tau, \xi^1 = \sigma)$  and world sheet light-cone partial derivatives are defines as  $\partial_{\pm} = \partial_{\tau} \pm \partial_{\sigma}$ . Superspace in which string propagates is spanned both by bosonic  $x^{\mu}$  ( $\mu = 0, 1, ..., 9$ ) and fermionic  $\theta^{\alpha}$ ,  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$  ( $\alpha = 1, 2, ..., 16$ ) coordinates. Variables  $\pi_{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\pi}_{\alpha}$  represent canonically conjugated momenta of fermionic coordinates  $\theta^{\alpha}$ and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$ , respectively. Fermionic coordinates and their canonically conjugated momenta are Majorana-Weyl spinors. It means that each of these spinors has 16 independent real valued components.

## 5.1.2 Choice of the background fields

Background fields that we will work with are all constants except except RR field  $P^{\alpha\beta}$ . This field will have linear coordinate dependence only on bosonic coordinates  $x^{\mu}$ . These fields can not be chosen at random, infact they must satisfy consistency relations outlined in Chapter 2.2. These consistency relations impose following form on supermatrix  $A_{MN}$ 

$$A_{MN} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \kappa(\frac{1}{2}g_{\mu\nu} + B_{\mu\nu}) & \bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\mu} & 0 \\ 0 & -\Psi^{\alpha}_{\nu} & \frac{2}{\kappa}(f^{\alpha\beta} + C^{\alpha\beta}_{\rho}x^{\rho}) & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}.$$
 (5.1.10)

Here  $g_{\mu\nu}$  is symmetric tensor,  $B_{\mu\nu}$  is again Kalb-Ramond antisymmetric field,  $\Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu}$  and  $\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}$  are Mayorana-Weyl gravitino fields, and finally,  $f^{\alpha\beta}$  and  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\rho}$  are constants. Dilaton field  $\Phi$  is assumed to be constant, so, the factor  $e^{\Phi}$  is included in  $f^{\alpha\beta}$  and  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\rho}$ . This will be a classical analysis and we will not calculate the dilaton shift under T-duality transformation. Based on the chirality of spinors, there are type IIA superstring theory for opposite chirality and type IIB superstring theory for same chirality.

Since background fields must satisfy consistency relations we have one additional restriction imposed

### 5.1. General type II superstring action and choice of background fields

$$\Gamma^{\mu}_{\alpha\beta}C^{\beta\gamma}_{\mu} = 0, \quad \Gamma^{\mu}_{\alpha\beta}C^{\gamma\beta}_{\mu} = 0.$$
(5.1.11)

Remaining constraints [31] are trivial and applied only to non-physical fields.

In addition to choice of supermatrix, in order to simplify calculation of bosonic T-duality, because all background fields are expanded in powers of  $\theta^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$ , all  $\theta^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$  non-linear terms in  $X^M$  and  $\bar{X}^N$  will be neglected. This greatly simplifies components of these two vectors and they now have following form

$$\Pi^{\mu}_{\pm} \to \partial_{\pm} x^{\mu}, \quad d_{\alpha} \to \pi_{\alpha}, \quad \bar{d}_{\alpha} \to \bar{\pi}_{\alpha}. \tag{5.1.12}$$

Taking into account all these assumptions, the action (5.1.1) takes the form

$$S = \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{\kappa}{2} \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu} - \pi_{\alpha} (\partial_{-} \theta^{\alpha} + \Psi^{\alpha}_{\nu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu}) + (\partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}) \bar{\pi}_{\alpha} + \frac{2}{\kappa} \pi_{\alpha} (f^{\alpha\beta} + C^{\alpha\beta}_{\rho} x^{\rho}) \bar{\pi}_{\beta} \right].$$
(5.1.13)

Here, we combined flat space-time metric  $\eta_{\mu\nu}$  with  $g_{\mu\nu}$  to obtain metric tensor  $G_{\mu\nu} = \eta_{\mu\nu} + g_{\mu\nu}$ . This tensor is again combined with Kalb-Ramon field to obtain  $\Pi_{\pm\mu\nu} = B_{\mu\nu} \pm \frac{1}{2}G_{\mu\nu}$  which is the same tensor we had introduced when we dealt with bosonic string.

Fermionic momenta  $\pi_{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\pi}_{\alpha}$  that appear in above action play the role of auxiliary fields which can be removed by finding their equations on motion and inserting them back into the action

$$\bar{\pi}_{\beta} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\beta\alpha} \left( \partial_{-} \theta^{\alpha} + \Psi^{\alpha}_{\nu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu} \right), \qquad (5.1.14)$$

$$\pi_{\alpha} = -\frac{\kappa}{2} \left( \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\beta} + \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\mu} \right) \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\beta\alpha} , \qquad (5.1.15)$$

where we denote two new substitutions  $F^{\alpha\beta}(x)$  and  $(F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta}$  of the form

$$F^{\alpha\beta}(x) = f^{\alpha\beta} + C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu} x^{\mu}, \quad (F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta} = (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} - (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_1} C^{\alpha_1\beta_1}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_1\beta} x^{\mu}. \tag{5.1.16}$$

If we wish to invert previous equations and T-dual transformation laws, as well as to simplify calculations, we must take into account two additional assumptions. First assumption has already been touched upon and that is need for infinitesimal  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ . This is reminiscent of diluted flux approximation for bosonic string and in fact this assumption plays exactly the same role as did assumption for H. Second assumption is that  $(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_1}C^{\alpha_1\beta_1}_{\mu}(f^{-1})_{\beta_1\beta}$  is antisymmetric under exchange of first and last index. In other words, tensor  $(F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta}$  has only antisymmetric part that depends on  $x^{\mu}$  and it is infinitesimal. These two additional assumptions do not in any way, shape or form infringe on consistency relations for background fields or alter the properties of other fields.

Substituting equations (5.1.14) and (5.1.15) into (5.1.13) the final form of action is

$$S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_+ x^{\mu} \partial_- x^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2} (\partial_+ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \partial_+ x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}) \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \left( \partial_- \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} \partial_- x^{\nu} \right) \right].$$
(5.1.17)

Having obtained this action, we can safely proceed with T-dualization.

## 5.2 T-dualization

In this section T-duality will be performed along all bosonic coordinates in order to find relations that connect T-dual coordinates with coordinates and momenta of original theory. These transformation laws will then be used in subsequent chapters to find non-commutativity relations between coordinates of T-dual theory.

Starting point for considering T-duality will be generalized Buscher T-dualization procedure [44]. This procedure works when we have theories with coordinate dependent background fields. Standard Buscher procedure [36, 43], which we had partially utilized in previous two chapters, is designed to be applied along isometry directions on which background fields do not depend and is not applicable here. The shift symmetry in the generalized procedure is localized by introduction of covariant derivatives, invariant coordinates and additional gauge fields. These newly introduced gauge fields produce additional degrees of freedom. Since we expect that starting and T-dual theory have exactly the same number of degrees of freedom we need to eliminate all excessive degrees of freedom. This is accomplished by demanding that field strength of gauge fields ( $F_{+-} = \partial_+ v_- - \partial_- v_+$ ) vanishes by addition of Lagrange multipliers. Next step in procedure is fixing the gauge symmetry such that starting coordinates are constant and action is only left with gauge fields, expressing gauge fields as function of Lagrange multipliers and inserting those equations into action we can obtain T-dual action, were Lagrange multipliers of original theory now play the role of T-dual coordinates.

Action (5.1.17) is invariant to translation symmetry, by the virtue of antisymmetric part of  $F_{\alpha\beta}^{-1}$ , tensor  $(f^{-1}C_{\mu}f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta}$ . Following antisymmetricity of this tensor, we can rewrite the action (5.1.17) in the following way

$$S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_+ x^{\mu} \partial_- x^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2} \epsilon^{mn} \partial_m (\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}) \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_n (\theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} x^{\nu}) \right].$$
(5.2.1)

Let us now consider the global shift symmetry  $\delta x^{\mu} = \lambda^{\mu}$  and vary the action (5.2.1)

$$\delta S = -\frac{\kappa}{2} (f^{-1} C_{\mu} f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \lambda^{\mu} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \epsilon^{mn} \partial_m (\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu} x^{\nu}) \partial_n (\theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\rho} x^{\rho}) , \qquad (5.2.2)$$

where m, n are indices of the two dimensional worldsheet. After one partial integration, we first obtain surface term, which we neglect because we are interested only in trivial topologies with trivial winding conditions. Second term which we obtain is identically zero because it is product of symmetric,  $\partial_m \partial_n$ , and antisymmetric,  $\epsilon^{mn}$ , tensor. So, the shift isometry exists.

In order to find T-dual action we have to implement following substitutions

#### 5.2. T-dualization

$$\partial_{\pm}x^{\mu} \to D_{\pm}x^{\mu} = \partial_{\pm}x^{\mu} + v^{\mu}_{\pm}, \tag{5.2.3}$$

$$x^{\mu} \to x^{\mu}_{inv} = \int_{P} d\xi^{m} D_{m} x^{\mu} = x^{\mu}(\xi) - x^{\mu}(\xi_{0}) + \Delta V^{\mu}, \\ \Delta V^{\mu} = \int_{P} d\xi^{m} v^{\rho}_{m}(\xi), \qquad (5.2.4)$$

$$S \longrightarrow S + \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ v^{\mu}_{+} \partial_{-} y_{\mu} - v^{\mu}_{-} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \right].$$
(5.2.5)

Here we decided that  $y_{\mu}$  will play the role of Lagrange multiplier and subsequently the role of Tdual coordinate. Because of the shift symmetry we are allowed to fix the gauge,  $x^{\mu}(\xi) = x^{\mu}(\xi_0)$ and, inserting these substitutions into action (5.1.17), we obtain auxiliary action suitable for T-dualization

$$S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \Pi_{+\mu\nu} v_{+}^{\mu} v_{-}^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2} (\partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + v_{+}^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu}^{\alpha}) \left( F^{-1}(\Delta V) \right)_{\alpha\beta} (\partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} + \Psi_{\nu}^{\beta} v_{-}^{\nu}) + \frac{1}{2} (v_{+}^{\mu} \partial_{-} y_{\mu} - v_{-}^{\mu} \partial_{+} y_{\mu}) \right].$$
(5.2.6)

Similarly as before, working with invariant coordinate we have necessary introduction of nonlocality into the theory. Also, path P that is taken in expression for  $\Delta V^{\rho}$  goes from some starting point  $\xi_0$  to end point  $\xi$ .

In order to check if substitutions we had introduced are valid and that they will lead to correct T-dual theory of starting action, we need to be able to obtain original action by finding solutions to equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers. Equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers give us

$$\partial_{-}v_{\pm}^{\mu} - \partial_{\pm}v_{-}^{\mu} = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad v_{\pm}^{\mu} = \partial_{\pm}x^{\mu}. \tag{5.2.7}$$

Inserting this result into (5.2.4) we get the following

$$\Delta V^{\rho} = \int_{P} d\xi'^{m} \partial_{m} x^{\rho}(\xi') = x^{\rho}(\xi) - x^{\rho}(\xi_{0}) = \Delta x^{\rho}.$$
(5.2.8)

Since, we had shift symmetry in original action, we can let  $x^{\rho}(\xi_0)$  be any arbitrary constant. Taking all this into account and inserting (5.2.7), (5.2.8) into (5.2.6) we obtain our starting action (5.1.17).

Before we obtain equations of motion for gauge fields, we would like to make following substitution in action

$$Y_{+\mu} = \partial_{+} y_{\mu} - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( F^{-1}(\Delta V) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}, \qquad Y_{-\mu} = \partial_{-} y_{\mu} + \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \left( F^{-1}(\Delta V) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}, \tag{5.2.9}$$

$$\bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} = \Pi_{+\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \left( F^{-1}(\Delta V) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} = \breve{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_1} C^{\alpha_1\beta_1}_{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_1\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} \Delta V^{\rho}, \quad (5.2.10)$$

$$\breve{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} \equiv \Pi_{+\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu}.$$
(5.2.11)

These substitutions allow us to write down gauge fixed action into more manageable form

5. Bosonic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-field

$$S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} v^{\mu}_{+} v^{\nu}_{-} + \frac{1}{2} v^{\mu}_{+} Y_{-\mu} - \frac{1}{2} v^{\mu}_{-} Y_{+\mu} + \frac{1}{2} \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( F^{-1}(\Delta V) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} \right].$$
(5.2.12)

This action produces following equations of motion for gauge fields

$$\bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu}v_{-}^{\nu} = -(\frac{1}{2}Y_{-\mu} + \beta_{\mu}^{+}(V)), \qquad \bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu}v_{+}^{\mu} = \frac{1}{2}Y_{+\nu} - \beta_{\nu}^{-}(V).$$
(5.2.13)

Here, function  $\beta^{\pm}(V)$  is obtained from variation of term containing  $\Delta V^{\rho}$  in expression for  $F^{-1}(\Delta V)$  (details are presented in Appendix C)

$$\beta_{\mu}^{-}(V) = \frac{1}{4} \partial_{+} \left[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + V^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \left[ \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} V^{\nu_{2}} \right] - \frac{1}{4} \left[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + V^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \partial_{+} \left[ \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} V^{\nu_{2}} \right] \beta_{\mu}^{+}(V) = \frac{1}{4} \left[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + V^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \partial_{-} \left[ \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} V^{\nu_{2}} \right] - \frac{1}{4} \partial_{-} \left[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + V^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \left[ \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} V^{\nu_{2}} \right] .$$
(5.2.14)

Here we have took advantage of the fact that  $\partial_{\pm}V^{\mu} = v^{\mu}_{\pm}$  (more details in Appendix C). Let us note that  $V^{\mu}$  in the expressions for beta functions is actually  $V^{(0)\mu}$  because it stands besides  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ . We omit index (0) just in order to simplify the form of the expressions.

In order to find how gauge fields depend on Lagrange multipliers, we need to invert equations of motion (5.2.13). Since  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$  is an infinitesimal constant, these equations can be inverted iteratively [14]. We separate variables into two parts, one finite and one proportional to  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ . After doing this we have

$$v_{-}^{\nu} = -\bar{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu\mu} \Big[ \frac{1}{2} Y_{-\mu} + \beta_{\mu}^{+} (V^{(0)}) \Big], \qquad v_{+}^{\mu} = \Big[ \frac{1}{2} Y_{+\nu} - \beta_{\nu}^{-} (V^{(0)}) \Big] \bar{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu\mu}.$$
(5.2.16)

Functions  $\beta_{\pm\mu}(V^{(0)})$  are obtained by substituting first order of expression for  $v_{\pm}$  into  $\beta_{\pm\mu}(V)$ , where  $V^{(0)}$  is given by

$$\Delta V^{(0)\rho} = \int_{P} d\xi^{m} v_{m}^{(0)\rho}$$
  
=  $\frac{1}{2} \int_{P} d\xi^{+} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\rho_{1}\rho} \left[ \partial_{+} y_{\rho_{1}} - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \Psi_{\rho_{1}}^{\beta} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \int_{P} d\xi^{-} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\rho\rho_{1}} \left[ \partial_{-} y_{\rho_{1}} + \bar{\Psi}_{\rho_{1}}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} \right].$   
(5.2.17)

Where  $\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}$  is inverse tensor of  $\bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} = \Pi_{+\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}\left(F^{-1}(\Delta V)\right)_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\nu}$ , defined as

$$\bar{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu}\bar{\Pi}_{+\nu\rho} = \delta_{\rho}^{\mu}, \qquad (5.2.18)$$

#### 5.2. T-dualization

where

$$\bar{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} = \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}\breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu_{1}}\bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}V^{(0)\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta_{1}}\breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu_{1}\nu}, \qquad (5.2.19)$$

$$\breve{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\breve{\Pi}_{\nu\rho} = \delta^{\mu}_{\rho}, \qquad \breve{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-} = \Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-} - \frac{1}{2}\Theta^{\mu\mu_{1}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu_{1}}(\bar{f}^{-1})_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{1}}\Theta^{\nu_{1}\nu}_{-}$$
(5.2.20)

$$\bar{f}^{\alpha\beta} = f^{\alpha\beta} + \frac{1}{2} \Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu} \Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-} \bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\nu}, \qquad (5.2.21)$$

$$\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-}\Pi_{+\mu\rho} = \delta^{\mu}_{\rho}, \qquad \Theta_{-} = -4(G_E^{-1}\Pi_{-}G^{-1})^{\mu\nu}.$$
(5.2.22)

Tensor  $G_{E\mu\nu} \equiv G_{\mu\nu} - 4(BG^{-1}B)_{\mu\nu}$  is known in the literature as the effective metric.

Inserting equations (5.2.16) into (5.2.6), keeping only terms that are linear in  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$  we obtain T-dual action

$${}^{b}S = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} \left[ \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} Y_{+\mu} Y_{-\nu} + \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( F^{-1}(\Delta V) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} \right].$$
(5.2.23)

Here superscript <sup>b</sup> denotes bosonic T-duality. Comparing starting action (5.1.17) with T-dual action, were we note that  $\partial_{\pm}x^{\mu}$  transforms into  $\partial_{\pm}y_{\mu}$  and  $x^{\mu}$  transforms into  $V^{(0)}$ , we can deduce that T-dual action has following arguments.

$${}^{b}\bar{\Pi}^{\mu\nu}_{+} = \frac{1}{4}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}, \qquad (5.2.24)$$

$$\left({}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta} = \left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta} - \frac{1}{2}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\mu}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\beta_{1}\beta}, \qquad (5.2.25)$$

$${}^{b}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu\alpha}\left({}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta} = \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta},\qquad(5.2.26)$$

$$\left({}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta}{}^{b}\Psi^{\nu\beta} = -\frac{1}{2}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}.$$
(5.2.27)

In order to express T-dual gravitino background fields in terms of its components, it is useful to calculate inverse of field  ${}^{b}F_{\alpha\beta}^{-1}$ 

$${}^{b}F^{\alpha\beta}(V^{(0)}) = F^{\alpha\beta}(V^{(0)}) + \frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu}\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\nu}.$$
(5.2.28)

With this equation at hand it is straightforward to obtain T-dual gravitino fields. Here we present T-dual gravitino fields expanded in terms of their components

$${}^{b}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu\alpha} = \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu} + \frac{1}{4}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\mu_{1}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\mu_{1}}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\beta\beta_{1}}\Psi^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu}\Theta^{\nu\nu_{1}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}},\tag{5.2.29}$$

$${}^{b}\Psi^{\nu\beta} = -\frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-} - \frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}\Theta^{\mu\mu_{1}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu_{1}}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\nu_{1}}\bar{\Theta}^{\nu_{1}\nu}_{-}.$$
(5.2.30)

The general conclusion is that all background fields get the linear corrections in  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$  comparing with the results of the case with constant background fields [40]. Also the coordinate dependence is present in all T-dual background fields.

From the above equations we see how background fields of original theory transform under T-duality. It should be noted that these actions are of the same form taking into account that initial coordinates  $x^{\mu}$  are replaced by  $y_{\mu}$  after T-dualization.

## 5.3 T-dualization of T-dual theory

Requirement that original theory and T-dual one describe the same physics it should be possible that we can switch from one onto other by cycling T-duality. That is, applying T-duality twice does not introduce any changes. In this chapter we would like to do just that, we will apply T-duality procedure onto already dualized theory in order to get back to starting theory. This fact is actually a way to test if our calculations were correct.

When we started with T-duality in previous chapter, we started by testing if theory possessed translational invariance. Here, because of the presence of  $\Delta V^{(0)}$ , we do not need to conduct such a test, theory is invariant. This can be easily deduced by checking eq. (5.2.17) and taking notice that every instance of dual coordinate  $y_{\mu}$  is accompanied with partial derivative. We begin T-dualization by implementing following substitutions

$$\partial_{\pm} y_{\mu} \to D_{\pm} y_{\mu} = \partial_{\pm} y_{\mu} + u_{\pm\mu} \to D_{\pm} y_{\mu} = u_{\pm\mu}, \qquad (5.3.1)$$

$$\Delta V^{(0)\rho} \to \Delta U^{(0)\rho}, \tag{5.3.2}$$

$$\Delta U^{(0)\rho} = \frac{1}{2} \int_{P} d\xi^{+} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\rho_{1}\rho} \left[ u_{+\rho_{1}} - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \Psi_{\rho_{1}}^{\beta} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \int_{P} d\xi^{-} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\rho\rho_{1}} \left[ u_{-\rho_{1}} + \bar{\Psi}_{\rho_{1}}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} \right] , \qquad (5.3.3)$$

$$Y_{+\mu} \to U_{+\mu} = u_{+\mu} - \partial_+ \bar{\theta}^\alpha \left( F^{-1}(\Delta U^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \Psi^\beta_\mu \tag{5.3.4}$$

$$Y_{-\mu} \to U_{-\mu} = u_{-\mu} + \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \left( F^{-1}(\Delta U^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}$$
(5.3.5)

$${}^{b}S \rightarrow {}^{b}S + \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi (u_{+\mu}\partial_{-}x^{\mu} - u_{-\mu}\partial_{+}x^{\mu}) \,.$$

$$(5.3.6)$$

We denoted newly introduced gauge fields with  $u_{\pm}$  while  $x^{\mu}$  are Lagrange multipliers. In first line we immediately fixed gauge by choosing  $y_{\mu}(\xi) = const$ . Inserting these substitutions into (5.2.23) we get

$${}^{b}S_{fix} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} U_{+\mu} U_{-\nu} + \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( F^{-1} (\Delta U^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} + (u_{+\mu} \partial_{-} x^{\mu} - u_{-\mu} \partial_{+} x^{\mu}) \Big].$$
(5.3.7)

Finding equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers and inserting solution to those equations into gauge fixed action we return to the starting point of this chapter, T-dual action. On the other hand, finding equations of motion for gauge fields

$$u_{+\mu} = 2 \Big[ \partial_+ x^{\nu} \bar{\Pi}_{+\nu\mu} + \beta^-_{\mu}(x) \Big] + \partial_+ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}, \qquad (5.3.8)$$

$$u_{-\mu} = -2 \Big[ \bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu} + \beta^{+}_{\mu}(x) \Big] - \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} , \qquad (5.3.9)$$

and inserting these equations into the gauge fixed action, keeping all terms linear with respect to  $C^{\mu\nu}_{\rho}$ , we obtain our original action (5.1.17). Here we use the freedom to choose  $\Delta x^{\mu} = x^{\mu}(\xi) - x^{\mu}(\xi_0)$ , with  $x^{\mu}(\xi_0) = 0$ .

## 5.4 Non-commutative relations

We have already seen is simpler case that T-dual transformation laws, that connect dual and original theory through their coordinates, along with Poisson bracket of original theory can be combined in such a way to generate Poisson algebra of T-dual theory. This chapter continues on this philosophy however we will be interested only in Poisson brackets of one half of the theory, bosonic half. We leave examination of completely dualized theory as well as examination of full Poisson algebra to following chapter.

Starting theory was geometric theory whose were space-time coordinates  $x^{\mu}(\xi)$  and their conjugated momenta  $\pi_{\mu}(\xi)$ . It is natural to impose standard Poisson bracket structure on such a theory

$$\{x^{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = \delta^{\mu}_{\nu}\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \quad \{x^{\mu}(\sigma), x^{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = 0, \quad \{\pi_{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = 0.$$
(5.4.1)

Since we have applied T-duality twice to this case we have two sets of transformation laws that connect gauge wields with Lagrange multipliers. First set was presented in (5.2.16) and other set was given by (5.3.8) and (5.3.9). These laws are equivalent and no matter the choice there is no difference in results. We will chose to start with relations (5.3.8) and (5.3.9) and using solutions to equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers  $x^{\mu}$ ,  $u_{\pm\mu} = \partial_{\pm}y_{\mu}$ , we obtain following T-dual transformation laws

$$\partial_{+}y_{\mu} \cong 2\left[\partial_{+}x^{\nu}\bar{\Pi}_{+\nu\mu} + \beta_{\mu}^{-}(x)\right] + \partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}\left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}, \qquad (5.4.2)$$

$$\partial_{-}y_{\mu} \cong -2\left[\bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu}\partial_{-}x^{\nu} + \beta_{\mu}^{+}(x)\right] - \bar{\Psi}_{\mu}^{\alpha} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-}\theta^{\beta}, \qquad (5.4.3)$$

where symbol  $\cong$  denotes T-dual transformation. Subtracting these two equations and by utilizing properties of light-cone coordinates (Appendix A), we get

$$y'_{\mu} \cong \bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu}\partial_{-}x^{\nu} + \partial_{+}x^{\nu}\bar{\Pi}_{+\nu\mu} + \beta^{+}_{\mu} + \beta^{-}_{\mu} + \frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta}\partial_{-}\theta^{\beta} .$$
(5.4.4)

Taking into account that bosonic momenta,  $\pi_{\mu}$  of original theory are of the form

$$\pi_{\mu} = \kappa \Big[ \bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu} + \partial_{+} x^{\nu} \bar{\Pi}_{+\nu\mu} + \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} + \frac{1}{2} \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\mu} \Big], \quad (5.4.5)$$

and  $\beta^0_{\mu} = \beta^+_{\mu} + \beta^-_{\mu}$ , we obtain

$$y'_{\mu} \cong \frac{\pi_{\mu}}{\kappa} + \beta^0_{\mu}(x) \,. \tag{5.4.6}$$

Here  $\beta^0_{\mu}(x)$  is given by

$$\beta^{0}_{\mu}(x) = \frac{1}{2} \partial_{\sigma} \left[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + x^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \left[ \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} x^{\nu_{2}} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \left[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + x^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \partial_{\sigma} \left[ \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} x^{\nu_{2}} \right].$$
(5.4.7)

To find Poisson bracket between T-dual coordinates, we can start by finding Poisson bracket

#### 5. Bosonic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-field

of sigma derivatives of T-dual coordinates and then integrating twice (see [13, 47, 54], Appendix B). Implementing this procedure we have that Poisson bracket is given as

$$\{y_{\nu_{1}}(\sigma), y_{\nu_{2}}(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong$$

$$\frac{1}{2\kappa} [2\delta^{\mu_{1}}_{\nu_{1}}\delta^{\mu_{2}}_{\nu_{2}} - \delta^{\mu_{2}}_{\nu_{1}}\delta^{\mu_{1}}_{\nu_{2}}] \Big[ K_{\mu_{1}\mu_{2}}(\bar{\sigma}) + K_{\mu_{2}\mu_{1}}(\sigma) \Big] \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}) ,$$
(5.4.8)

where, for the sake of simplicity, we introduced

$$K_{\mu\nu}(\sigma) = \left(\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\sigma) + x^{\mu_{1}}(\sigma)\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu_{1}}\right)(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} - \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\left(\theta^{\beta}(\sigma) + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{1}}x^{\nu_{1}}(\sigma)\right).$$
(5.4.9)

Here,  $\bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma})$  is same step function defined in Appendix B. Due to how we defined Heaviside step function  $\bar{H}$  we have that these Poisson brackets are zero when  $\sigma = \bar{\sigma}$ . However, in cases where string in curled around compactified dimension, that is cases where  $\sigma - \bar{\sigma} = 2\pi$ , we have following situation

$$\{y_{\nu_{1}}(\sigma+2\pi), y_{\nu_{2}}(\sigma)\} \cong \frac{1}{2\kappa} [2\delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{2}} - \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}}\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{1}}] \Big[ K_{\mu_{1}\mu_{2}}(\sigma) + K_{\mu_{2}\mu_{1}}(\sigma) \Big] + \frac{\pi}{\kappa} N^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\mu_{2}}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Psi_{\mu_{3}}^{\beta} [\delta_{\mu}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}}\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{3}} - \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}}\delta_{\mu}^{\mu_{3}} + \delta_{\mu}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{2}}\delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{3}} - \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{2}}\delta_{\mu}^{\mu_{3}} \Big].$$
(5.4.10)

Here we used fact that  $\bar{H}(2\pi) = 1$ , while  $N^{\rho}$  is winding number around compactified coordinate defined as

$$x^{\mu}(\sigma + 2\pi) - x^{\mu}(\sigma) = 2\pi N^{\mu}.$$
(5.4.11)

From this relation we can see that if we choose  $x^{\mu}(\sigma) = 0$  than Poisson bracket has linear dependence on winding number. In cases where we do not have any winding number, we still have non-commutativity that is proportional to background fields.

Using the expression for sigma derivative of  $y_{\nu}$  (5.4.6) and expression for Poisson bracket of T-dual coordinates (5.4.8), we can find non-associative relations. Procedure is the same as for finding Poisson brackets of T-dual theory, we find Poisson bracket of sigma derivative and integrate with respect to sigma coordinate, this time integration is done once. Going along with this procedure we have the final result

$$\{y_{\nu}(\sigma), \{y_{\nu_{1}}(\sigma_{1}), y_{\nu_{2}}(\sigma_{2})\}\} \cong \frac{1}{2\kappa} \bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{2}) \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\mu_{2}}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Psi_{\mu_{3}}^{\beta} \\ \times \Big[\bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma) [2\delta_{\nu}^{\mu_{1}} \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{2}} \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{3}} - 2\delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{1}} \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{2}} \delta_{\nu}^{\mu_{3}} - \delta_{\nu}^{\mu_{1}} \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}} \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{3}} + \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{1}} \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}} \delta_{\nu}^{\mu_{3}} \Big] \\ + \bar{H}(\sigma_{2} - \sigma) [2\delta_{\nu}^{\mu_{1}} \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}} \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{3}} - 2\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{1}} \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}} \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{3}} - \delta_{\nu}^{\mu_{1}} \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{3}} \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{3}} + \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{1}} \delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{2}} \delta_{\nu}^{\mu_{3}} \Big] .$$

$$(5.4.12)$$

Since Jacobi identity is non-zero for T-dual theory we have that coordinate dependent RR field produces non-associative theory. However putting  $\sigma = \sigma_2 = \bar{\sigma}$  and  $\sigma_1 = \bar{\sigma} + 2\pi$  we have

#### 5.4. Non-commutative relations

following Jacobi identity

$$\{y_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma}), \{y_{\nu_{1}}(\bar{\sigma}+2\pi), y_{\nu_{2}}(\bar{\sigma})\}\} \cong$$

$$\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu_{2}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu_{3}}[2\delta^{\mu_{1}}_{\nu}\delta^{\mu_{2}}_{\nu_{2}}\delta^{\mu_{3}}_{\nu_{1}} - 2\delta^{\mu_{1}}_{\nu_{1}}\delta^{\mu_{2}}_{\nu_{2}}\delta^{\mu_{3}}_{\nu} - \delta^{\mu_{1}}_{\nu}\delta^{\mu_{2}}_{\nu_{2}}\delta^{\mu_{3}}_{\nu_{2}} + \delta^{\mu_{1}}_{\nu_{2}}\delta^{\mu_{3}}_{\nu_{1}}\delta^{\mu_{3}}_{\nu}].$$

$$(5.4.13)$$

Examining equation (5.4.6), we notice that  $\partial_{\sigma} y_{\mu}$  is not only a linear combination of initial coordinate and its momenta but also has terms that are proportional to fermionic coordinates. This might lead us to believe that T-dual theory would have nontrivial Poisson bracket between T-dual coordinate and fermionic coordinates. However, this is not the case, and it can be directly calculated by finding Poisson bracket between sigma derivative of T-dual coordinate and fermion coordinates (more details in Appendix B).

$$\{\theta^{\alpha}(\sigma), y_{\mu}(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong 0, \qquad \{\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\sigma), y_{\mu}(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong 0.$$
(5.4.14)

We will examine if these Poisson brackets go through any change when we also dualize fermionic coordinates.

# 6. Fermionic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-field

This chapter is based on work done in paper [98]

Up until now we have only been interested in T-duality of bosonic coordinates, which is reminiscent of historical development of said topic. Even through T-duality was originally conceived with bosonic coordinates in mind [38] it is possible to extend it to fermionic coordinates also [11, 99, 100, 101]. Fermionic T-duality, just as was case before, maps supersymmetric background fields and fermionic coordinates of one theory to supersymmetric backgrounds and coordinates of other theory. While actors in this play are different it is surprising that method for obtaining fermionic T-duality is the same as before, Buscher procedure [36, 43]. Even in cases where background fields depend on fermionic coordinates generalized procedure is applicable. Since we had enough opportunity to see both standard and generalized procedures at work, this favorable circumstance greatly reduces difficulty of this chapter.

In this chapter we continue the work that has been started in previous chapter, we finish dualization of action that has been dualized along bosonic coordinates. Main reason we are interested in this endeavor is to find out if such a theory will give rise to non-commutative relations of the type  $\{\bar{\theta}, \theta\} \sim x$ . While it was already hinted that we will fail short in our quest, without doing explicit calculations this is not obvious. This raises one question, why is it not obvious that there will be no fermionic non-commutativity? Have we not seen that in bosonic case, when we do not have background fields that depend on coordinates we can not expect emergence of non-commutativity in dual theory no mater the order in which we chose to do Tdualization. Answer to this question lies in one little caveat of superstring case, while it is true that background fields of starting theory did not depend on fermionic coordinate, by performing bosonic T-duality we have introduced non-local part which was encoded in  $\Delta V^{\mu}$ . This term now possesses dependence on fermionic coordinate and appears in all backgroundfields of T-dual theory. This fact opens another question, if we had decided to perform fermionic T-duality first and then bosonic, then we would not have to worry about appearance of fermionic coordinates in background fields, does this mean that order of T-dualiy is important in superstring case? Sadly, answer to this question is again negative and throughout this chapter we will carry on explicit calculations that show this fact.

To summarise, this chapter will deal with fermionic T-duality of both theory that has already been dualized along bosonic coordinates and one which has not been dualized. By obtaining transforamtion laws for both cases we will examine non-commutative relations as we have done many times before.

# 6.1 Type II superstring action and action dualized along bosonic coordinates

Actions that we will work with are superstring action in pure spinor formalism with coordinate dependent RR field as well as its T-dual. Both of these actions have already been presented in previous chapter and here we will only give quick summary.

## 6.1.1 Type II superstring in pure spinor formulation

For the first action we have

$$S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_+ x^{\mu} \partial_- x^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2} (\partial_+ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \partial_+ x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}) \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \left( \partial_- \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} \partial_- x^{\nu} \right) \right], \quad (6.1.1)$$

where again tensors that appear in above expression have following form

$$\Pi_{\pm\mu\nu} = B_{\mu\nu} \pm \frac{1}{2} G_{\mu\nu}, \qquad (6.1.2)$$

$$F^{\alpha\beta}(x) = f^{\alpha\beta} + C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu} x^{\mu}, \quad (F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta} = (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} - (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_1} C^{\alpha_1\beta_1}_{\rho} x^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_1\beta}. \tag{6.1.3}$$

Since this is a logical follow up to previous chapter, properties of the  $(F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta}$  tensor are the same as before. We are working with tensor that has antisymmetric and infinitesimal coordinate dependent part. Rest of the symbols have following meaning:  $x^{\mu}$  ( $\mu = 0, 1, ..., 9$ ) are bosonic coordinates,  $\theta^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$  are fermionic coordinates with 16 independent real components each which are Majorana-Weyl spinors, superspace is parameterized by  $\xi^{m}$  ( $\xi^{0} = \tau, \xi^{1} = \sigma$ ) and light-cone partial derivatives  $\partial_{\pm} = \partial_{\tau} \pm \partial_{\sigma}$ .

## 6.1.2 Bosonic T-dual action

Action that is obtained after T-dualizing (6.1.1)

$${}^{b}S = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \partial_{-} y_{\nu} + \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( {}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} + \partial_{+} y_{\mu} {}^{b} \bar{\Psi}^{\mu\alpha} \left( {}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} + \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( {}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} {}^{b}\Psi^{\nu\beta} \partial_{-} y_{\nu} \Big],$$

$$(6.1.4)$$

where  $y_{\mu}$  represents T-dual coordinate, left superscript <sup>b</sup> denotes bosonic T-duality and  $\Delta V^{0}$  represents following integral

$$\Delta V^{(0)\rho} =$$

$$= \frac{1}{2} \int_{P} d\xi^{+} \breve{\Theta}^{\rho_{1}\rho}_{-} \left[ \partial_{+} y_{\rho_{1}} - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\rho_{1}} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \int_{P} d\xi^{-} \breve{\Theta}^{\rho\rho_{1}}_{-} \left[ \partial_{-} y_{\rho_{1}} + \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\rho_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} \right].$$

$$(6.1.5)$$

As we can see  $\Delta V^{(0)\rho}$  does indeed contain fermionic coordinates and by association so do

### 6. Fermionic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-field

background fields. This is the main differentiating fact between type II superstring theory and its bosonic counterpart.

T-dual tensors that appear in action have following interpretation:  $\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}$  is inverse tensor of  $\bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} = \Pi_{+\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}(F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} = \breve{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_1}C^{\alpha_1\beta_1}_{\rho}x^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_1\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\nu}$ , defined as

$$\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Pi}_{+\nu\rho} = \delta^{\mu}_{\rho}. \tag{6.1.6}$$

Remaining properties are listed in great detain in previous chapter (5.2.19), (5.2.20), (5.2.21), (5.2.22). While background fields are given as

$$\left({}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta} = \left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta} - \frac{1}{2}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\mu}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\beta_{1}\beta}.$$
(6.1.7)

Tensor  $({}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}))_{\alpha\beta}$  is T-dual to  $(F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta}$  and T-dual gravitino fields are given as

$${}^{b}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu\alpha} = \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu} + \frac{1}{4}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\mu_{1}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\mu_{1}}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\beta\beta_{1}}\Psi^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu}\Theta^{\nu\nu_{1}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} = \frac{1}{2}\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}, \tag{6.1.8}$$

$${}^{b}\Psi^{\nu\beta} = -\frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-} - \frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}\Theta^{\mu\mu_{1}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu_{1}}\left(F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\nu_{1}}\bar{\Theta}^{\nu_{1}\nu}_{-} = -\frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-}.$$
(6.1.9)

Having presented these two theories we can focus on main part of this chapter, fermionic Tduality.

## 6.2 Fermionic T-duality

No matter on which theory we decide to dualize first we have to note one thing and that is that both actions (6.1.1) and (6.1.4) do not posses terms proportional to  $\partial_+\theta^{\alpha}$  and  $\partial_-\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$ . This means that our fermionic coordinates have following local symmetry

$$\delta\theta^{\alpha} = \epsilon^{\alpha}(\sigma^{+}), \quad \delta\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} = \bar{\epsilon}^{\alpha}(\sigma^{-}), \quad (\sigma^{\pm} = \tau \pm \sigma).$$
(6.2.1)

We need to fix this symmetry before obtaining T-dual theory, one way to do this is through BRST formalism. This symmetry has following corresponding BRST transformations for fermionic fields

$$s\theta^{\alpha} = c^{\alpha}(\sigma^{+}), \qquad s\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} = \bar{c}^{\alpha}(\sigma^{-}).$$
 (6.2.2)

Here s is BRST nilpotent operator,  $c^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{c}^{\alpha}$  represent ghost fields that correspond to gauge parameters  $\epsilon^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\epsilon}^{\alpha}$  respectively. In addition to ghost fields we also have following BRST transformations

$$sC_{\alpha} = b_{+\alpha}, \quad s\bar{C}_{\alpha} = \bar{b}_{-\alpha}, \quad sb_{+\alpha} = 0, \quad s\bar{b}_{-\alpha} = 0.$$
 (6.2.3)

where  $\bar{C}_{\alpha}$  and  $C_{\alpha}$  are anti-ghosts,  $b_{+\alpha}$  and  $\bar{b}_{-\alpha}$  are Nakanishi-Lautrup auxiliary fields.

Fixing of gauge symmetry is accomplished by introduction of gauge fermion, where we have

#### 6.2. Fermionic T-duality

decided to follow procedure that has been outlined in [102]

$$\Psi = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \Big[ \bar{C}_{\alpha} \Big( \partial_+ \theta^{\alpha} + \frac{1}{2} \alpha^{\alpha\beta} b_{+\beta} \Big) + \Big( \partial_- \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \frac{1}{2} \bar{b}_{-\beta} \alpha^{\beta\alpha} \Big) C_{\alpha} \Big], \tag{6.2.4}$$

here  $\alpha^{\alpha\beta}$  is arbitrary invertible matrix.

Applying BRST transformation to gauge fermion we obtain gauge fixed action and Fadeev-Popov action

$$S_{gf} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \Big[ \bar{b}_{-\alpha} \partial_+ \theta^\alpha + \partial_- \bar{\theta}^\alpha b_{+\alpha} + \bar{b}_{-\alpha} \alpha^{\alpha\beta} b_{+\beta} \Big], \qquad (6.2.5)$$

$$S_{F-P} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \Big[ \bar{C}_{\alpha} \partial_+ c^{\alpha} + (\partial_- \bar{c}^{\alpha}) C_{\alpha} \Big].$$
(6.2.6)

Fadeev-Popov term contains only ghosts and anti-ghosts and it is decoupled from the actions (6.1.1) and (6.1.4). From this point on, this term will be ignored. Gauge fixing term contains auxiliary fields  $\bar{b}_{-\alpha}$  and  $b_{+\alpha}$  that can be removed with equations of motion

$$\bar{b}_{-\alpha} = -\partial_{-}\bar{\theta}^{\beta}(\alpha^{-1})_{\beta\alpha}, \qquad b_{+\alpha} = -(\alpha^{-1})_{\alpha\beta}\partial_{+}\theta^{\beta}, \qquad (6.2.7)$$

giving us

$$S_{gf} = -\frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial_- \bar{\theta}^\alpha (\alpha^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_+ \theta^\beta.$$
(6.2.8)

Inserting guage fixing term into (6.1.1) and (6.1.4) gives us actions that can be dualized with Buscher procedure.

## 6.2.1 Type II superstring - fermionic T-duality

In order to not be overwhelmed we will work with non dualized theory first. Buscher procedure that we apply here, after finding gauge fixing term, does not in any significant way differ from one we applied before.

Since both action (6.1.1) and gauge fixing term (6.2.8) are trivially invariant to global translations of fermionic coordinates, we localize this translational symmetry by replacing partial derivatives with covariant ones

$$\partial_{\pm}\theta^{\alpha} \to D_{\pm}\theta^{\alpha} = \partial_{\pm}\theta^{\alpha} + u^{\alpha}_{+},$$
(6.2.9)

$$\partial_{\pm}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \to D_{\pm}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} = \partial_{\pm}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+}. \tag{6.2.10}$$

New gauge fields  $u^\alpha_\pm$  and  $\bar{u}^\alpha_\pm$  introduce new degrees of freedom that are removed by addition of term

$$S_{add} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \bar{z}_{\alpha} (\partial_+ u_-^{\alpha} - \partial_- u_+^{\alpha}) + (\partial_+ \bar{u}_-^{\alpha} - \partial_- \bar{u}_+^{\alpha}) z_{\alpha} \right].$$
(6.2.11)

Gauge freedom can be utilized to fix fermionic coordinates such that  $\theta^{\alpha} = \theta_0^{\alpha} = const$  and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} = \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}_0 = const$ . This in turn reduces our covariant derivatives to

6. Fermionic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-field

$$D_{\pm}\theta^{\alpha} \to u^{\alpha}_{+}, \qquad D_{\pm}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \to \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+}.$$
 (6.2.12)

With all this in mind, we have following action

$$S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2} (\bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+} + \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}) \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} (u^{\beta}_{-} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu}) \\ - \frac{1}{2} \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{-} (\alpha^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} u^{\beta}_{+} + \frac{1}{2} \bar{z}_{\alpha} (\partial_{+} u^{\alpha}_{-} - \partial_{-} u^{\alpha}_{+}) + \frac{1}{2} (\partial_{+} \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{-} - \partial_{-} \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+}) z_{\alpha} \Big].$$
(6.2.13)

On one side we have equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers  $\bar{z}_{\alpha}$  and  $z_{\alpha}$ 

$$\partial_{+}u_{-}^{\alpha} - \partial_{-}u_{+}^{\alpha} = 0 \quad \rightarrow \quad u_{\pm}^{\alpha} = \partial_{\pm}\theta^{\alpha}, \tag{6.2.14}$$

$$\partial_{+}\bar{u}^{\alpha}_{-} - \partial_{-}\bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+} = 0 \quad \to \quad \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{\pm} = \partial_{\pm}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}. \tag{6.2.15}$$

Inserting solutions for these equations into action (6.2.13) we obtain starting action plus gauge fixing term.

Variation of action with respect to gauge fields produces following set of equations of motion

$$u_{-}^{\alpha} = -\left(F^{\alpha\beta}(x)\partial_{-}z_{\beta} + \Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu}\partial_{-}x^{\mu}\right), \qquad (6.2.16)$$

$$u_{+}^{\alpha} = -\alpha^{\alpha\beta}\partial_{+}z_{\beta}, \qquad (6.2.17)$$

$$\bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+} = \partial_{+} \bar{z}_{\beta} F^{\beta \alpha}(x) - \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}, \qquad (6.2.18)$$

$$\bar{u}_{-}^{\alpha} = \partial_{-}\bar{z}_{\beta}\alpha^{\beta\alpha}.$$
(6.2.19)

Utilizing these equations we can remove gauge fields from action, resulting in action that depends only on Lagrange multipliers and bosonic coordinates

$${}^{f}S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2} \partial_{+} \bar{z}_{\alpha} \Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu} \partial_{-} x^{\mu} + \frac{1}{2} \partial_{+} \bar{z}_{\alpha} F^{\alpha\beta}(x) \partial_{-} z_{\beta} \\ - \frac{1}{2} \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \partial_{-} z_{\alpha} - \frac{1}{2} \partial_{-} \bar{z}_{\alpha} \alpha^{\alpha\beta} \partial_{+} z_{\beta} \Big].$$

$$(6.2.20)$$

Just like in the bosonic case, we have that left superscript f denotes fermionic T-duality. From here we can deduce background fields of feriomionic T-dual theory

$${}^{f}\bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} = \Pi_{+\mu\nu}, \tag{6.2.21}$$

$${}^{f}\left(F^{-1}(x)\right)^{\alpha\beta} = F^{\alpha\beta}(x),$$
 (6.2.22)

$${}^{f}\bar{\Psi}_{\mu\beta} {}^{f}\left(F^{-1}(x)\right)^{\beta\alpha} = -\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \quad \to \quad {}^{f}\bar{\Psi}_{\mu\beta} = -\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}\left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta}, \tag{6.2.23}$$

$${}^{f}\left(F^{-1}(x)\right)^{\alpha\beta}{}^{f}\Psi_{\mu\beta} = \Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu} \quad \rightarrow \quad {}^{f}\Psi_{\mu\beta} = \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\beta\alpha}\Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu}. \tag{6.2.24}$$

Unlike bosonic case, fermionic T-dual theory is local. This can be attributed to the fact that background fields do not depend on fermionic coordinates. This in turn means that theory is geometric and we should not expect emergence of non-commutative phenomena.

#### 6.2. Fermionic T-duality

## 6.2.2 Fermionic T-duality of bosonic T-dual theory

To obtain fully dualized theory we start with action that is already T-dualized along bosonic coordinates (6.1.4). Procedure for fermionic T-duality is mostly the same as described before. The only difference comes from the fact that bosonic T-duality introduced non-local term  $V^0$ which depends on  $\theta^{\alpha}$  and  $\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$  and now we need to introduce invariant fermionic coordinates in order for action to exhibit local shift symmetry

$$D_{\pm}\theta^{\alpha} = \partial_{\pm}\theta^{\alpha} + u^{\alpha}_{\pm}, \qquad (6.2.25)$$

$$D_{\pm}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} = \partial_{\pm}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{\pm}, \qquad (6.2.26)$$

$$\theta_{inv}^{\alpha} = \int_{P} d\xi^{m} D_{m} \theta^{\alpha} = \int_{P} d\xi^{m} (\partial_{m} \theta^{\alpha} + u_{m}^{\alpha}) = \Delta \theta^{\alpha} + \Delta U^{\alpha}, \qquad (6.2.27)$$

$$\bar{\theta}_{inv}^{\alpha} = \int_{P} d\xi^{m} D_{m} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} = \int_{P} d\xi^{m} (\partial_{m} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \bar{u}_{m}^{\alpha}) = \Delta \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \Delta \bar{U}^{\alpha}.$$
(6.2.28)

Fixing gauge symmetry as before, setting fermionic coordinates to constants, we deduce following relations

$$D_{\pm}\theta^{\alpha} \to u^{\alpha}_{\pm}, \qquad D_{\pm}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \to \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{\pm}, \qquad \theta^{\alpha}_{inv} \to \Delta U^{\alpha}, \qquad \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}_{inv} \to \Delta \bar{U}^{\alpha}.$$
 (6.2.29)

With these relations we obtain action that is only a function of gauge fields, Lagrange multipliers and dual coordinates

$${}^{b}S_{fix} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \partial_{-} y_{\nu} + \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+} \left( {}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} u^{\beta}_{-} + \partial_{+} y_{\mu}{}^{b} \bar{\Psi}^{\mu\alpha} \left( {}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} u^{\beta}_{-} + \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+} \left( {}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} {}^{b}\Psi^{\nu\beta} \partial_{-} y_{\nu} - \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{-} (\alpha^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} u^{\beta}_{+} + \bar{z}_{\alpha} (\partial_{+} u^{\alpha}_{-} - \partial_{-} u^{\alpha}_{+}) + (\partial_{+} \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{-} - \partial_{-} \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+}) z_{\alpha} \Big].$$

$$(6.2.30)$$

In order to simplify calculations we introduce the following two substitutions

$$({}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}))_{\alpha\beta} {}^{b}\Psi^{\nu\beta}\partial_{-}y_{\nu} + \partial_{-}z_{\alpha} = Z_{-\alpha}, \qquad \partial_{+}y_{\mu}{}^{b}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu\alpha} ({}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}))_{\alpha\beta} - \partial_{+}\bar{z}_{\beta} = \bar{Z}_{+\beta}.$$
 (6.2.31)

Now, our action can be expressed as

$${}^{b}S_{fix} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \partial_{-} y_{\nu} + \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+} \left( {}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)}) \right)_{\alpha\beta} u^{\beta}_{-} + \bar{Z}_{+\beta} u^{\beta}_{-} + \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+} Z_{-\alpha} - \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{-} (\alpha^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} u^{\beta}_{+} + \partial_{-} \bar{z}_{\alpha} u^{\alpha}_{+} - \bar{u}^{\alpha}_{-} \partial_{+} z_{\alpha} \Big].$$

$$(6.2.32)$$

Similar to the first case, we can always revert to starting action by finding equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers and inserting their solutions into the action. In both cases equations of motion are the same so we take the freedom to omit them here.

## 6. Fermionic T-duality of supersimetric string with coordinate dependent RR-field

Equations of motion for gauge fields differ in this case. Since we have that  $V^{(0)}$  depends on fermionic coordinates, equations of motion have additional term that depends on invariant coordinate.

$$u_{+}^{\alpha} = -(\alpha)^{\alpha\beta}\partial_{+}z_{\beta}, \qquad \bar{u}_{-}^{\beta} = \partial_{-}\bar{z}_{\alpha}(\alpha)^{\alpha\beta}, \qquad (6.2.33)$$

$$\bar{u}^{\alpha}_{+} = -\bar{Z}_{+\beta} \, {}^{b}F^{\beta\alpha}(V^{(0)}) - \beta^{-}_{\nu}(V^{(0)}, U^{(0)}) \, {}^{b}\bar{\Psi}^{\nu\alpha}, \qquad (6.2.34)$$

$$u_{-}^{\beta} = -{}^{b}F^{\beta\alpha}(V^{(0)})Z_{-\alpha} - \beta_{\mu}^{+}(V^{(0)}, U^{(0)}) {}^{b}\Psi^{\mu\beta}.$$
(6.2.35)

The beta functions,  $\beta^{\pm}_{\mu}(V^{(0)}, U^{(0)})$ , are obtained by varying  $V^{(0)}$  (see [97] and Appendix C for more details). They are given as

$$\beta_{\mu}^{\pm}(V^{(0)}, U^{(0)}) = \mp \frac{1}{8} \partial_{\mp} \left[ \bar{U}^{\alpha} + V^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \left[ U^{\beta} + \Psi_{\nu_{2}}^{\beta} V^{\nu_{2}} \right] \\ \pm \frac{1}{8} \left[ \bar{U}^{\alpha} + V^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \partial_{\mp} \left[ U^{\beta} + \Psi_{\nu_{2}}^{\beta} V^{\nu_{2}} \right].$$
(6.2.36)

Inserting equations of motion for gauge fields into action (6.2.32) and keeping only terms linear with respect to  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ , we obtain fully dualized action

$${}^{bf}S = \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \Big[ \frac{1}{2} \bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-} \partial_+ y_{\mu} \partial_- y_{\nu} - \bar{Z}_{+\alpha}{}^b F^{\alpha\beta}(V^{(0)}) Z_{-\beta} - \partial_- \bar{z}_{\alpha}(\alpha)^{\alpha\beta} \partial_+ z_{\beta} \Big]. \tag{6.2.37}$$

Expanded, we have

$${}^{bf}S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \frac{1}{4} \Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \partial_{-} y_{\nu} - \frac{1}{4} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu} \partial_{-} z_{\alpha} - \frac{1}{4} \partial_{+} \bar{z}_{\alpha} \Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu} \Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-} \partial_{-} y_{\nu} + \frac{1}{2} \partial_{+} \bar{z}_{\alpha}{}^{b} F^{\alpha\beta}(V^{(0)}) \partial_{-} z_{\beta} - \frac{1}{2} \partial_{-} \bar{z}_{\alpha}(\alpha)^{\alpha\beta} \partial_{+} z_{\beta} \Big].$$

$$(6.2.38)$$

From here, we can read background fields the fully of T-dualized theory

$${}^{bf}\bar{\Pi}^{\mu\nu}_{+} = \frac{1}{4}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-} - \frac{1}{2}{}^{b}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu\alpha} \left({}^{b}F^{-1}(V^{(0)})\right)_{\alpha\beta}{}^{b}\Psi^{\nu\beta} = \Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-},$$

$${}^{bf} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)^{\alpha\beta} = {}^{b}F^{\alpha\beta}(x) = F^{\alpha\beta}(x) + \frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu}\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\nu},$$

$${}^{bf}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu}_{\alpha}{}^{bf} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)^{\alpha\beta} = {}^{b}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu\beta} = \frac{1}{2}\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\nu} \quad \rightarrow \quad {}^{bf}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu}_{\alpha} = \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta}_{\nu} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\beta\alpha},$$

$${}^{bf} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)^{\alpha\beta}{}^{bf}\Psi^{\nu}_{\beta} = {}^{b}\Psi^{\nu\alpha} = -\frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu}\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-} \quad \rightarrow \quad {}^{bf}\Psi^{\nu}_{\beta} = -\frac{1}{2}\left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\beta\alpha}\Psi^{\alpha}_{\mu}\bar{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}.$$

$$(6.2.39)$$

Comparing background fields in different stages of T-dualization we notice that both fermionic T-duality and bosonic T-duality affect all field, where all T-dual theories now have coordinate dependent fields. It should also be noted that non-commutative relations in theory emerge only after performing bosonic T-duality. Fermionic T-dual coordinates are always only proportional to fermionic momenta therefore Poisson brackets between fermionic coordinates always remain

zero.

## 6.2.3 Bosonic T-duality of fermionic T-dual theory

For completion sake, we will also T-dualize fermionic T-dual action (6.2.20) along  $x^{\mu}$  coordinates. In this specific case, where only RR field depends on bosonic coordinate, we expect that bosonic and fermionic T-dualities commute. Therefore, this section can be also thought of as a check for calculations from previous section.

We again start by localizing translational symmetry, inserting Lagrange multipliers and fixing gauge fields. This produces following gauge fixed action

$${}^{f}S_{fix} = \kappa \int d^{2}\xi \Big[ v_{+}^{\mu}\Pi_{+\mu\nu}v_{-}^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}\bar{z}_{\alpha}f^{\alpha\beta}\partial_{-}z_{\beta} + \frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}\bar{z}_{\alpha}C_{\mu}^{\alpha\beta}\partial_{-}z_{\beta}\Delta V^{\mu} \\ + \frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}\bar{z}_{\alpha}\Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha}v_{-}^{\mu} - \frac{1}{2}v_{+}^{\mu}\bar{\Psi}_{\mu}^{\alpha}\partial_{-}z_{\alpha} - \frac{1}{2}\partial_{-}\bar{z}_{\alpha}\alpha^{\alpha\beta}\partial_{+}z_{\beta} + \frac{1}{2}y_{\mu}(\partial_{+}v_{-}^{\mu} - \partial_{-}v_{+}^{\mu})\Big].$$
(6.2.40)

Introducing the variables

$$Y_{+\mu} = \partial_+ y_\mu - \partial_+ \bar{z}_\alpha \Psi^\alpha_\mu, \quad Y_{-\mu} = \partial_- y_\mu - \bar{\Psi}^\alpha_\mu \partial_- z_\alpha, \qquad (6.2.41)$$

the action (6.2.40) gets much simpler form

$${}^{f}S_{fix} = \kappa \int d^{2}\xi \Big[ v_{+}^{\mu}\Pi_{+\mu\nu}v_{-}^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}\bar{z}_{\alpha}f^{\alpha\beta}\partial_{-}z_{\beta} + \frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}\bar{z}_{\alpha}C_{\mu}^{\alpha\beta}\partial_{-}z_{\beta}\Delta V^{\mu} \\ - \frac{1}{2}Y_{+\mu}v_{-}^{\mu} + \frac{1}{2}v_{+}^{\mu}Y_{-\mu} \Big].$$
(6.2.42)

Varying the above action with respect to gauge fields  $v^{\mu}_{+}$  and  $v^{\mu}_{-}$ , we get, respectively,

$$\Pi_{+\mu\nu}v_{-}^{\nu} = -\frac{1}{2}Y_{-\mu} - \beta_{+\mu}(V), \qquad (6.2.43)$$

$$v_{+}^{\nu}\Pi_{+\nu\mu} = \frac{1}{2}Y_{+\mu} - \beta_{-\mu}(V), \qquad (6.2.44)$$

where  $\beta_{\pm\mu}$  are the beta functions obtained from coordinate dependent term in the action

$$\beta_{\pm\mu} = \mp \frac{1}{8} \left( \bar{z}_{\alpha} C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu} \partial_{\mp} z_{\beta} - \partial_{\mp} \bar{z}_{\alpha} C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu} z_{\beta} \right).$$
(6.2.45)

Inserting (6.2.43) and (6.2.44) into the auxiliary action (6.2.42), keeping the terms linear in  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ , we obtain fully T-dualized action (first fermionic, then bosonic T-dualization)

$${}^{fb}S = \kappa \int d^2 \xi \left[ \frac{1}{2} \partial_+ \bar{z}_{\alpha} F^{\alpha\beta}(\Delta V) \partial_- z_{\beta} + \frac{1}{4} Y_{+\mu} (\Pi_+^{-1})^{\mu\nu} Y_{-\nu} \right] \,. \tag{6.2.46}$$

Expanding above action, it can easily be seen that it is identical to one given in (6.2.38).

## 6.3 Few notes on non-commutativity

We have already saw that bosonic T-duality produces non-commutative relations between bosonic T-dual coordinates. Now we want to see how these relations are modified by fermionic T-duality and if new ones emerge. Procedure for finding non-commutativity is exactly the same as in all the chapters leading to here, we impose standard Poisson bracket structure on starting theory and utilize T-dual transformation laws. Only difference here is that we have additional starting Poisson brackets, brackets containing fermionic coordinates

$$\{x^{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = \delta^{\mu}_{\nu}\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \quad \{\theta^{\alpha}(\sigma), \pi_{\beta}(\bar{\sigma})\} = \{\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\sigma), \bar{\pi}_{\beta}(\bar{\sigma})\} = -\delta^{\alpha}_{\beta}\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \quad (6.3.1)$$

where all other Poisson brackets vanish.

We start with case that has only been T-dualized along fermionic coordinates. To find how T-dual coordinates depend on starting ones and their momenta we can begin by finding fermionic momenta of starting theory. It is useful to remember that starting theory did not posses terms that are proportional to  $\partial_+\theta^{\alpha}$  and  $\partial_-\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}$  and that this symmetry was fixed with BRST formalism. Addition of gauge fixing term introduced modification to momenta of starting theory and to obtain correct non-commutative relations we should be working with theories that have gauge fixing term in them. With this in mind, it is easy to find fermionic momentum of original theory (6.2.13)

$$\pi_{\beta} = -\frac{\kappa}{2} \left[ \left( \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \partial_{+} x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu} \right) \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} - \partial_{-} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} (\alpha^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \right], \tag{6.3.2}$$

$$\bar{\pi}_{\alpha} = \frac{\kappa}{2} \Big[ \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \left( \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} \partial_{-} x^{\nu} \right) - (\alpha^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{+} \theta^{\beta} \Big].$$
(6.3.3)

Since we want to obtain Poisson brackets for equal  $\tau$  we want to find  $\sigma$  partial derivatives of dual coordinate

$$\partial_{\sigma} z_{\alpha} = \frac{1}{2} (\partial_{+} z_{\alpha} - \partial_{-} z_{\alpha}) \cong \frac{1}{\kappa} \bar{\pi}_{\alpha}, \qquad (6.3.4)$$

$$\partial_{\sigma}\bar{z}_{\alpha} = \frac{1}{2}(\partial_{+}\bar{z}_{\alpha} - \partial_{-}\bar{z}_{\alpha}) \cong -\frac{1}{\kappa}\pi_{\alpha}.$$
(6.3.5)

Fermionic Momenta of original theory commute with each other and with  $x^{\mu}$  coordinates, therefore we deduce that there has been no change to geometric structure of this theory.

For fully dualized theory, transformation laws (6.2.33) (6.2.34) (6.2.35) all depend on dual bosonic coordinate however, when we insert transformation laws that connect original bosonic coordinates with T-dual ones

$$\partial_{+}y_{\mu} \cong 2\left[\partial_{+}x^{\nu}\bar{\Pi}_{+\nu\mu} + \beta_{\mu}^{-}(x)\right] + \partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}\left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu},\tag{6.3.6}$$

$$\partial_{-}y_{\mu} \cong -2\left[\bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu}\partial_{-}x^{\nu} + \beta_{\mu}^{+}(x)\right] - \bar{\Psi}_{\mu}^{\alpha} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-}\theta^{\beta}, \qquad (6.3.7)$$

into transformation laws for fermionic coordinates (6.2.33), (6.2.34) and (6.2.35) we again obtain relations (6.3.4) and (6.3.5).

On a first glance it would seem that fermionic T-duality has not produced any new Poisson brackets, however this is not the case. While it is true that there are no modifications to Poisson brackets between fermions, we have new Poisson bracket structure between fermions and bosons. This can be seen from  $\sigma$  derivative of bosonic T-dual coordinate

$$y'_{\mu} \cong \frac{\pi_{\mu}}{\kappa} + \beta^0_{\mu}(x), \qquad (6.3.8)$$

where  $\beta^0_{\mu}(x)$  is combination  $\beta^+_{\mu}(x) + \beta^-_{\mu}(x)$  we encountered before

$$\beta^{0}_{\mu}(x) = \frac{1}{2} \partial_{\sigma} \left[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + x^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \left[ \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} x^{\nu_{2}} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \left[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + x^{\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \right] (f^{-1})_{\alpha \alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \partial_{\sigma} \left[ \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} x^{\nu_{2}} \right].$$
(6.3.9)

Finding Poisson brackets between  $\sigma$  derivatives of coordinates and integrating twice we obtain following relations

$$\{y_{\mu}(\sigma), \bar{z}_{\beta}(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong$$

$$\frac{1}{2\kappa} \Big[ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\sigma) + x^{\nu_{1}}(\sigma) \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} - 2 \big( \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\bar{\sigma}) + x^{\nu_{1}}(\bar{\sigma}) \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}} \big) \Big] (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}),$$

$$\{y_{\mu}(\sigma), z_{\alpha}(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong$$

$$\frac{1}{2\kappa} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\mu} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Big[ \theta^{\beta}(\sigma) + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} x^{\nu_{2}}(\sigma) - 2 \big( \theta^{\beta}(\bar{\sigma}) + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}} x^{\nu_{2}}(\bar{\sigma}) \big) \Big] \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}).$$

$$(6.3.10)$$

$$(6.3.11)$$

Having failed to obtain non-commutativity relations between fermionic coordinates, not to mention ones that are proportional to bosonic ones, we conclude that hypothesis made in [31, 13] is not appropriate. Furthermore, having gained some insight how T-duality affects noncommutativity, we suspect that fermionic non-commutativity relations are possible but only in case where background fields depend on those coordinates.

# 7. Bosonic T-duality of supersymmetric string with coordinate dependent RR field - general case

This chapter is based on work done in paper [103]

In previous two chapters we have seen how T-duality affects type II superstring theory with coordinate dependent Ramond-Ramond field. During that presentation our ability to obtain both T-dual theory and T-dual transformation laws depended on two premises, one was that coordinate dependent part of RR field was infinitesimal and other was that it is antisymmetric. First of these assumptions was necessary in order to invert transformation laws while second one was introduced only in order to obtain  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions. It is sufficient to say that latter of these assumptions can be removed and since  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions do not play any role in T-dual action we expect the form of action to remain the same.

Here we will deal with theory whose coordinate dependent part of Ramond-Ramond field has both symmetric and antisymmetric part, where we will only focus on bosonic T-duality. This simple modification produces more general forms of  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions,  $N^{\pm}$  functions. Where  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions were dependent on some combination of coordinates and their derivatives,  $N^{\pm}$ are functions that depend on path of path integral that has been introduced with invariant coordinate. We expect that this departure from antisymmetric tensor to general one would not affect theory that much, however this can not be further from the truth. Even though final T-dual theory is the same, transforamtion laws and non-commutative relations are drastically more complex. This rise in complexion makes it impossibile to deduce Poisson brackets of T-dual theory the same way as we did before.

Since we have already obtained both bosonic duality and full duality of type II superstring it is natural to wonder why go this extra step. The answer to this question lies in the fact that, if we ever wish to work with more complex background fields it will not be possible to impose antisymmetric restrictions on all fields. By working out the kinks of such approach on case when the fields are relatively simple we hope that all future extensions to background fields would follow the same procedure for obtaining T-dual transformation laws.

## 7.1 Action and choice of background fields

Since this is only generalization of work done before and action that we will work with has already been mentioned few times we will just quickly list it here again, without going in any detail what the symbols mean (for detailed exposition consult Chapter 5 and Chapter 6)

$$S = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ \Pi_{+\mu\nu} \partial_+ x^{\mu} \partial_- x^{\nu} + \frac{1}{2} (\partial_+ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + \partial_+ x^{\mu} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}) \left( F^{-1}(x) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \left( \partial_- \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} \partial_- x^{\nu} \right) \right].$$
(7.1.1)

with

$$F^{\alpha\beta}(x) = f^{\alpha\beta} + C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu} x^{\mu}, \quad (F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta} = (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} - (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_1} C^{\alpha_1\beta_1}_{\rho} x^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_1\beta}.$$
(7.1.2)

where this time we do not impose any conditions on tensors  $f^{\alpha\beta}$  and  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ , except that  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$  is infinitesimal. Having done this we can focus on main point of this chapter T-duality.

## 7.2 T-dualization - general case

This section will deal with problem of obtaining T-dual theory and transformation laws that connect dual and original theory. Where these laws will be used in subsequent sections.

## 7.2.1 Implementation of the generalized T-dualization procedure

In every chapter until now where we dealth with T-duality we relied on either standard [36, 43] or generalized [46] Buscher procedures. This stemmed from the fact that actions were invariant to shift symmetry. In case with coordinate dependent background fields, that was a consequence of antisymmetry. Because we decided to work with field that has symmetric part thus rendering any invariance to translations invalid, we can not rely on dualization methods we utilized before.

Thankfully, there has been development on this front and there are methods for obtaining T-duality in the cases with absence of shift symmetry [45]. In fact method that has been developed is mostly identical to generalized Buscher procedure, where we replace original action with auxiliary one which does possess translation invariance. Form of this action is exactly the same as the form of action where translation symmetry was localized and gauge fixed. In order for this action to produce correct T-dual theory we need to be able to salvaged original action from it.

Following this philosophy we insert following substitutions into action (7.1.1) in order to make it invariant to translations

$$\partial_{\pm}x^{\mu} \to v^{\mu}_{\pm},\tag{7.2.1}$$

$$x^{\rho} \longrightarrow \Delta V^{\rho} = \int_{P} d\xi'^{m} v_{m}^{\rho}(\xi'), \qquad (7.2.2)$$

$$S \longrightarrow S + \frac{\kappa}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \left[ v^{\mu}_{+} \partial_{-} y_{\mu} - v^{\mu}_{-} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \right], \qquad (7.2.3)$$

The result is auxiliary action convenient for T-dualization procedure

$$S_{aux} = \kappa \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \left[ \Pi_{+\mu\nu} v^{\mu}_{+} v^{\nu}_{-} + \frac{1}{2} (\partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + v^{\mu}_{+} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}) \left( F^{-1}(\Delta V) \right)_{\alpha\beta} \left( \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu} v^{\nu}_{-} \right) + \frac{1}{2} (v^{\mu}_{+} \partial_{-} y_{\mu} - v^{\mu}_{-} \partial_{+} y_{\mu}) \right].$$
(7.2.4)

# 7. Bosonic T-duality of supersymmetric string with coordinate dependent RR field - general case

The form of this action is exactly the same as one we had when we worked with antisymmetric field. Let us note that path P starts from  $\xi_0$  and ends in  $\xi$ . In this way action becomes non-local.

Finding equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers

$$\partial_{-}v_{+}^{\mu} - \partial_{+}v_{-}^{\mu} = 0, \quad v_{\pm}^{\mu} = \partial_{\pm}x^{\mu},$$
(7.2.5)

and inserting them into (7.2.2) we have

$$\Delta V^{\rho} = \int_{P} d\xi'^{m} \partial_{m} x^{\rho}(\xi') = x^{\rho}(\xi) - x^{\rho}(\xi_{0}) = \Delta x^{\rho}.$$
(7.2.6)

In absence of translational symmetry, in order to extract starting action from auxiliary one, we impose  $x^{\rho}(\xi_0) = 0$  as a constraint. Taking all this into account, we get the starting action (7.1.1).

Euler-Lagrange equations of motion for gauge fields  $v_{\pm}(\kappa)$  give the following ones

$$-\frac{1}{2}\partial_{-}y_{\mu}(\kappa) = \Pi_{+\mu\nu}v_{-}^{\nu}(\kappa) + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}_{\mu}^{\alpha}\left(F^{-1}(\Delta V)\right)_{\alpha\beta}\left(\partial_{-}\theta^{\beta}(\kappa) + \Psi_{\nu}^{\beta}v_{-}^{\nu}(\kappa)\right)$$

$$-\frac{1}{2}\int_{\Sigma}d^{2}\xi\left[\partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\xi) + v_{+}^{\nu_{1}}(\xi)\bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha}\right](f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}N(\kappa^{+})\left[\partial_{-}\theta^{\beta}(\xi) + \Psi_{\nu_{2}}^{\beta}v_{-}^{\nu_{2}}(\xi)\right],$$

$$\frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}y_{\mu}(\kappa) = \Pi_{+\nu\mu}v_{+}^{\nu}(\kappa) + \frac{1}{2}\left(\partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\kappa) + v_{+}^{\nu}(\kappa)\bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\alpha}\right)\left(F^{-1}(\Delta V)\right)_{\alpha\beta}\Psi_{\mu}^{\beta}$$

$$-\frac{1}{2}\int_{\Sigma}d^{2}\xi\left[\partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\xi) + v_{+}^{\nu_{1}}(\xi)\bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha}\right](f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}N(\kappa^{-})\left[\partial_{-}\theta^{\beta}(\xi) + \Psi_{\nu_{2}}^{\beta}v_{-}^{\nu_{2}}(\xi)\right].$$

$$(7.2.7)$$

Here, function  $N(\kappa^{\pm})$  is obtained from variation of term containing  $\Delta V^{\rho}$  in expression for  $F^{-1}(\Delta V)$  (details are presented in Appendix D). They represent the generalization of beta functions introduced in Ref.[97]

$$N(\kappa^{+}) = \delta\left(\xi^{\prime -}\left((\xi^{\prime +})^{-1}(\kappa^{+})\right) - \kappa^{-}\right) \left[\bar{H}(\xi^{+} - \kappa^{+}) - H(\xi^{+}_{0} - \kappa^{+})\right],$$
(7.2.9)

$$N(\kappa^{-}) = \delta\left(\xi^{\prime +}\left((\xi^{\prime -})^{-1}(\kappa^{-})\right) - \kappa^{+}\right) \left[\bar{H}(\xi^{-} - \kappa^{-}) - H(\xi^{-}_{0} - \kappa^{-})\right],$$
(7.2.10)

where more details on Dirac delta function and step function are given in Appendix A. As we see the expressions for derivatives of  $y_{\mu}$  are more complex comparing with those in Chapter 5, where translational symmetry is present.

Assuming that  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$  is an infinitesimal, we can iteratively invert equations of motion (7.2.7) and (7.2.8) [14]. Separating variables into two parts, one finite and one infinitesimal proportional to  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ , we have
$$v_{-}^{\nu}(\kappa) = -\frac{1}{2} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu\nu_{1}} \Biggl\{ \partial_{-} y_{\nu_{1}}(\kappa) + \bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha} (F^{-1}(\Delta V))_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}(\kappa) + \frac{1}{2} \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\alpha_{2}} \Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}} \Psi_{\nu_{2}}^{\alpha_{3}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu_{2}\nu_{3}} \Biggl( \partial_{-} y_{\nu_{3}}(\kappa) + \bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{3}}^{\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}(\kappa) \Biggr) - \int_{\Sigma} d^{2} \xi \Biggl[ \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\xi) + \frac{1}{2} \Bigl( \partial_{+} y_{\mu_{1}}(\xi) - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\gamma_{1}}(\xi) (f^{-1})_{\gamma_{1}\gamma_{2}} \Psi_{\mu_{1}}^{\gamma_{2}} \Bigr) \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu_{1}\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha} \Biggr] (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} \times (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} N(\kappa^{+}) \Biggl[ \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}(\xi) - \frac{1}{2} \Psi_{\nu_{2}}^{\beta} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}} \Bigl( \partial_{-} y_{\mu_{2}}(\xi) + \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{2}}^{\gamma_{3}}(f^{-1})_{\gamma_{3}\gamma_{4}} \partial_{-} \theta^{\gamma_{4}}(\xi) \Bigr) \Biggr] \Biggr\},$$

$$(7.2.12)$$

$$v_{+}^{\mu}(\kappa) = \frac{1}{2} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu_{1}\mu} \Biggl\{ \partial_{+} y_{\mu_{1}}(\kappa) - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\kappa) (F^{-1}(\Delta V))_{\alpha\beta} \Psi_{\mu_{1}}^{\beta} + \frac{1}{2} \Bigl( \partial_{+} y_{\mu_{2}}(\kappa) - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\kappa) (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu_{2}}^{\alpha_{1}} \Bigr) \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu_{2}\mu_{3}} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{3}}^{\beta_{3}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}} C_{\rho}^{\beta_{2}\beta_{1}} \Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Psi_{\mu_{1}}^{\beta} + \int_{\Sigma} d^{2} \xi \Bigl[ \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\xi) + \frac{1}{2} \Bigl( \partial_{+} y_{\mu_{2}}(\xi) - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\gamma_{1}}(\xi) (f^{-1})_{\gamma_{1}\gamma_{2}} \Psi_{\mu_{2}}^{\gamma_{2}} \Bigr) \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu_{2}\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha} \Bigr] (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} \times (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} N(\kappa^{-}) \Bigl[ \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}(\xi) - \frac{1}{2} \Psi_{\nu_{2}}^{\beta} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu_{2}\mu_{3}} \Bigl( \partial_{-} y_{\mu_{3}}(\xi) + \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{3}}^{\gamma_{3}}(f^{-1})_{\gamma_{3}\gamma_{4}} \partial_{-} \theta^{\gamma_{4}}(\xi) \Bigr) \Bigr] \Biggr\}.$$

$$(7.2.13)$$

Tensor  $\check{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}$  is inverse tensor to  $\check{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} = \Pi_{+\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\nu}$ , which satisfy  $\check{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\check{\Pi}_{+\nu\rho} = \delta^{\mu}_{\rho}$ whose properties are given in detail in equations (5.2.20), (5.2.21), (5.2.22). In above expressions  $\Delta V$  is a quantity in the zeroth order in  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ , which has the same form as we have encountered before

$$\Delta V^{(0)\rho} = \int d\xi^+ v_+^{\rho} + \int d\xi^- v_-^{\rho}$$
  
=  $\frac{1}{2} \int_P d\xi^+ \breve{\Theta}_-^{\rho_1 \rho} \left[ \partial_+ y_{\rho_1} - \partial_+ \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \Psi_{\rho_1}^{\beta} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \int_P d\xi^- \breve{\Theta}_-^{\rho_{\rho_1}} \left[ \partial_- y_{\rho_1} + \bar{\Psi}_{\rho_1}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_- \theta^{\beta} \right].$   
(7.2.14)

# 7. Bosonic T-duality of supersymmetric string with coordinate dependent RR field - general case

\_

Using (7.2.7) and (7.2.8) and inserting them into (7.2.4), we get T-dual action

$${}^{b}S = \kappa \int_{P} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{1}{4} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \partial_{-} y_{\nu} \right]$$

$$+ \frac{1}{8} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} \Delta V^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu_{1}\nu} \partial_{+} y_{\mu} \partial_{-} y_{\nu}$$

$$+ \frac{1}{2} \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( (F^{-1} (\Delta V))_{\alpha\beta} + \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\alpha_{2}} \Delta V^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{3}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \right]$$

$$- \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} + \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{3}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}} C_{\rho}^{\beta_{2}\beta_{1}} \Delta V^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \right]$$

$$- \frac{1}{4} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha_{2}} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{3}\beta_{3}} \Delta V^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}} \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta_{2}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu\nu\nu} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \right] \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}$$

$$+ \frac{1}{4} \partial_{+} \Psi_{\mu} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha} \left( (F^{-1} (\Delta V))_{\alpha\beta} + \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{3}} \Delta V^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}} \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta_{2}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu\nu\nu} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \right] \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu\nu}$$

$$\times \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}$$

$$- \frac{1}{4} \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( (F^{-1} (\Delta V))_{\alpha\beta} + \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha_{2}} (f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{3}\beta_{1}} \Delta V^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \right) \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu\nu}$$

$$\times \partial_{-} y_{\nu} \right].$$

$$(7.2.15)$$

Let us note that above we kept terms up to to the first order in  $C^{\alpha\beta}_{\mu}$ .

T-dual action contains all terms as initial action (5.1.17) up to the change  $x^{\mu} \to y_{\mu}$ . Consequently, T-dual background fields are of the form

$${}^{b}\Pi^{\mu\nu}_{+} = \frac{1}{4}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-} + \frac{1}{8}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu\mu\mu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu_{1}} \Big[ (F^{-1}(\Delta V))_{\alpha\beta} + (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\rho}\Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \\ - \frac{1}{2}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\mu_{2}}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu_{2}\nu_{2}}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu_{2}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} + \frac{1}{2}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C^{\alpha_{1}\alpha_{2}}_{\rho}\Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}}\Psi^{\alpha_{3}}_{\mu_{2}}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu_{2}\nu_{2}}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu_{2}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \\ + \frac{1}{2}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\mu_{2}}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu_{2}\mu_{2}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{3}}_{\nu_{2}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}}C^{\beta_{2}\beta_{1}}_{\rho}\Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \\ - \frac{1}{4}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\mu_{2}}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu_{2}\mu_{3}}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha_{3}}_{\mu_{3}}(f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}}C^{\alpha_{3}\beta_{3}}_{\rho}\Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}}\Psi^{\beta_{2}}_{\nu_{3}}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu_{3}\nu_{2}}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu_{2}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Big] \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu_{1}\nu}_{-},$$

$$(7.2.16)$$

$${}^{b}(F^{-1}(x))_{\alpha\beta} = (F^{-1}(\Delta V))_{\alpha\beta} + \frac{1}{2}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C^{\alpha_{1}\alpha_{2}}_{\rho}\Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}}\Psi^{\alpha_{3}}_{\mu}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \\ - \frac{1}{2}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\mu}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{\nu}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} + \frac{1}{2}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\mu}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{\nu}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{3}}_{\nu}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}}C^{\beta_{2}\beta_{1}}_{\rho}\Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \\ - \frac{1}{4}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}\Psi^{\alpha_{1}}_{\mu}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu\mu_{1}}_{\mu_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}}C^{\alpha_{3}\beta_{3}}_{\rho}\Delta V^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}}\Psi^{\beta_{2}}_{\nu_{1}}\breve{\Theta}^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\beta_{1}}_{\nu}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta},$$

$$(7.2.17)$$

$${}^{b}\bar{\Psi}^{\mu\alpha} = \frac{1}{2}\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu}, \qquad {}^{b}\Psi_{\nu\beta} = -\frac{1}{2}\Psi^{\beta}_{\mu}\Theta^{\mu\nu}_{-}.$$
(7.2.18)

Comparing background field of T-dual theory with background fields from Chapter 5 we immediately notice that background fields have become more complex. Tensor  $\Theta_{-}^{\mu\nu}$  is defined in (5.2.22). However, this is just an illusion. In both cases background field are exactly the same

only difference is that here we did not introduce tensor  $\bar{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu} = \Pi_{+\mu\nu} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\mu}F^{-1}(\Delta V)_{\alpha\beta}\Psi^{\beta}_{\nu}$ and its inverse, therefore we are missing ingredients to express our fields in more compactified format.

### 7.2.2 T-dualization of T-dual theory - general case

Having obtained T-dual theory we would like to check if this result is correct, best way to do this is to apply T-duality procedure again. Since the initial theory was not symmetric under translations, we had to introduce auxiliary action (7.2.4) which was invariant. This action produced T-dual theory which is invariant to translations of T-dual coordinates. Because of this we can dualize T-dual theory by generalized Buscher procedure. We start with the introduction of following substitutions

$$\partial_{\pm} y_{\mu} \to D_{\pm} y_{\mu} = \partial_{\pm} y_{\mu} + u_{\pm\mu} \to D_{\pm} y_{\mu} = u_{\pm\mu}, \qquad (7.2.19)$$

$$\Delta V^{\rho} \to \Delta U^{\rho}, \tag{7.2.20}$$

$$\Delta U^{\rho} = \frac{1}{2} \int_{P} d\xi^{+} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\rho_{1}\rho} \left[ u_{+\rho_{1}} - \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \Psi_{\rho_{1}}^{\beta} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \int_{P} d\xi^{-} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\rho_{\rho_{1}}} \left[ u_{-\rho_{1}} + \bar{\Psi}_{\rho_{1}}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta} \right] , \qquad (7.2.21)$$

$$S \to S + \frac{1}{2}(u_{+\mu}\partial_{-}x^{\mu} - u_{-\mu}\partial_{+}x^{\mu}).$$
 (7.2.22)

From the first line we see that gauge is fixed by choosing  $y_{\mu}(\xi) = const$ . Inserting these substitutions into (7.2.15) we obtain

$${}^{b}S_{fix} = \kappa \int_{P} d^{2}\xi \left[ \frac{1}{4} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} u_{+\mu} u_{-\nu} \right]$$

$$+ \frac{1}{8} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu\mu} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu1}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} \Delta U^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Psi_{\rho}^{\beta} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu\nu} u_{+\mu} u_{-\nu}$$

$$+ \frac{1}{2} \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( (F^{-1} (\Delta U))_{\alpha\beta} + \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\alpha_{2}} \Delta U^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{3}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}$$

$$- \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} + \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\nu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{3}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}} C_{\rho}^{\beta_{2}\beta_{1}} \Delta U^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}$$

$$- \frac{1}{4} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha_{2}} (f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{3}\beta_{3}} \Delta U^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}} \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta_{2}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu_{1}\nu} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \right) \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}$$

$$+ \frac{1}{4} u_{+\mu} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu\mu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha} \left( (F^{-1} (\Delta U))_{\alpha\beta} + \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{3}} \Delta U^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{3}\beta_{2}} \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta_{2}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu_{1}\nu} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \right)$$

$$\times \partial_{-} \theta^{\beta}$$

$$- \frac{1}{4} \partial_{+} \bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left( (F^{-1} (\Delta U))_{\alpha\beta} + \frac{1}{2} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} \Psi_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\mu\mu_{1}} \bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha_{2}} (f^{-1})_{\alpha_{2}\alpha_{3}} C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{3}\beta_{1}} \Delta U^{\rho} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \right) \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta_{1}} \breve{\Theta}_{-}^{\nu_{1}\nu}$$

$$\times u_{-\nu}$$

$$+ \frac{1}{2} (u_{+\mu} \partial_{-} x^{\mu} - u_{-\mu} \partial_{+} x^{\mu}) \right].$$

$$(7.2.23)$$

# 7. Bosonic T-duality of supersymmetric string with coordinate dependent RR field - general case

Using equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers, we return to the T-dual action. Finding equations of motion for gauge fields, we have

$$u_{+\mu}(\kappa) = 2\breve{\Pi}_{+\nu\mu}\partial_{+}x^{\nu}(\kappa) - \partial_{+}x^{\nu}(\kappa)\bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\alpha}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}\Delta x^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\Psi_{\mu}^{\beta} + \partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\kappa)(F^{-1}(\Delta x))_{\alpha\beta}\Psi_{\mu}^{\beta} - \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big(\partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\xi) + \partial_{+}x^{\mu_{1}}(\xi)\bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha}\Big)(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}N(\kappa^{-}) \times \Big(\partial_{-}\theta^{\beta}(\xi) + \Psi_{\nu}^{\beta}\partial_{-}x^{\nu}(\xi)\Big),$$
(7.2.24)  
$$u_{-\mu}(\kappa) = -2\breve{\Pi}_{+\mu\nu}\partial_{-}x^{\nu}(\kappa) + \bar{\Psi}_{\mu}^{\alpha}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}\Delta x^{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\Psi_{\nu}^{\beta}\partial_{-}x^{\nu}(\kappa) - \bar{\Psi}_{\mu}^{\alpha}(F^{-1}(\Delta x))_{\alpha\beta}\partial_{-}\theta^{\beta}(\kappa) + \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big(\partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha}(\xi) + \partial_{+}x^{\nu}(\xi)\bar{\Psi}_{\nu}^{\alpha}\Big)(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}N(\kappa^{-}) \times \Big(\partial_{-}\theta^{\beta}(\xi) + \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta}\partial_{-}x^{\nu_{1}}(\xi)\Big).$$
(7.2.25)

Here we have that  $\Delta x^{\mu} = x^{\mu}(\xi) - x^{\mu}(\xi_0)$ , and inserting these equations into the gauge fixed action, keeping all terms linear with respect to  $C^{\mu\nu}_{\rho}$  and selecting  $\xi_0$  such that  $x(\xi_0) = 0$ , we obtain our original action (5.1.17).

### 7.3 Non-commutative relations - general case

In order to find Poisson structure of T-dual theory we will be using relations (7.2.7) and (7.2.8) by expressing them in terms of coordinates and momenta of the initial theory. While this method worked flawlessly in previous chapters, here we would still be left with terms containing  $\partial_{\tau} x^{\mu}(\xi)$  which come from function  $N(\xi^{\pm})$ . This means that it is impossible to find same  $\tau$  Poisson brackets. One way to circumvent this is by first using equations of motion for coordinate  $x^{\mu}(\xi)$  and then replacing remaining  $\partial_{\tau} x^{\mu}$  term with canonical momentum. By doing all the steps that were outlined, we have following relationship between T-dual coordinate and variables of starting theory

$$\partial_{\sigma} y_{\nu}(\sigma) \cong 2B_{\nu\mu}\partial_{\sigma}x^{\mu} - G_{\nu\mu}(\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\nu_{1}\mu} \left[ \frac{\pi_{\nu_{1}}}{k} - \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{1}}^{\alpha} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta} \partial_{-}\theta^{\beta} \right] \\ - \frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta} \Psi_{\nu_{1}}^{\beta} - \left[\Pi_{+\mu_{1}\mu_{2}} + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha} \left(F^{-1}(x)\right)_{\alpha\beta} \Psi_{\mu_{2}}^{\beta}\right] \left(\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}} - \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{2}}\right) \partial_{\sigma}x^{\nu_{2}} \\ + \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}_{\mu_{1}}^{\alpha}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}x^{\rho}(\sigma)(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\Psi_{\mu_{2}}^{\beta}(\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{2}} - \delta_{\nu_{1}}^{\mu_{1}}\delta_{\nu_{2}}^{\mu_{2}}\right) (\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\rho\nu_{2}} \\ \times \left[\frac{\pi_{\rho}}{k} - \frac{1}{2}\bar{\Psi}_{\rho}^{\gamma}(f^{-1})_{\gamma\gamma_{1}}\partial_{-}\theta^{\gamma_{1}} - \frac{1}{2}\partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\gamma}(f^{-1})_{\gamma\gamma_{1}}\Psi_{\rho}^{\gamma_{1}} + \breve{\Pi}_{+\rho\rho_{1}}\partial_{\sigma}x^{\rho_{1}} - \breve{\Pi}_{+\rho_{1}\rho}\partial_{\sigma}x^{\rho_{1}}\right].$$

$$(7.3.1)$$

To find Poisson bracket between T-dual coordinates, we can start by finding Poisson bracket of sigma derivatives of T-dual coordinates and then integrating twice (see Appendix B). Imple-

#### 7.3. Non-commutative relations - general case

menting this procedure and utilizing Poisson brackets of original theory

$$\{x^{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = \delta^{\mu}_{\nu}\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \quad \{x^{\mu}(\sigma), x^{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = 0, \quad \{\pi_{\mu}(\sigma), \pi_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma})\} = 0, \quad (7.3.2)$$

we have that Poisson bracket for sigma derivatives is given as

$$\{\partial_{\sigma_{1}}y_{\nu_{1}}(\sigma_{1}),\partial_{\sigma_{2}}y_{\nu_{2}}(\sigma_{2})\} \cong$$

$$= \frac{2}{k}(\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{1}\mu_{2}} \Big[ G_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}B_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}}\partial_{\sigma_{2}}\delta(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{2}) - B_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}G_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}}\partial_{\sigma_{1}}\delta(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{2}) \Big]$$

$$+ \frac{1}{k}\bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{3}}^{\alpha}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\Psi_{\nu_{4}}^{\beta}(\delta_{\mu_{3}}^{\nu_{3}}\delta_{\mu_{4}}^{\nu_{4}} + \delta_{\mu_{3}}^{\nu_{4}}\delta_{\mu_{4}}^{\nu_{3}})(\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{3}\mu_{1}}(\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{4}\mu_{2}}$$

$$\times \Big[ G_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}B_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}}x^{\rho}(\sigma_{1})\partial_{\sigma_{2}}\delta(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{2}) - B_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}G_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}}x^{\rho}(\sigma_{2})\partial_{\sigma_{1}}\delta(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{2}) \Big].$$
(7.3.3)

Integrating with respect to  $\sigma_1$  ( $\sigma_2$ ), where we set boundaries as  $\sigma_0$  ( $\bar{\sigma}_0$ ) and  $\sigma$  ( $\bar{\sigma}$ ). Extracting only Poisson bracket terms that contain  $\sigma$  and  $\bar{\sigma}$ , we have

$$\{y_{\nu_{1}}(\sigma), y_{\nu_{2}}(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong \frac{2}{k} (\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{1}\mu_{2}} \Big[ G_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}} B_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}} + B_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}} G_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}} \Big] H(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}) + \frac{1}{k} \bar{\Psi}_{\nu_{3}}^{\alpha} (f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} G_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}} (f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Psi_{\nu_{4}}^{\beta} (\delta_{\mu_{3}}^{\nu_{3}} \delta_{\mu_{4}}^{\nu_{4}} + \delta_{\mu_{3}}^{\nu_{4}} \delta_{\mu_{4}}^{\nu_{3}}) (\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{3}\mu_{1}} (\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{4}\mu_{2}} (7.3.4) \times \Big[ G_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}} B_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}} x^{\rho}(\bar{\sigma}) + B_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}} G_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}} x^{\rho}(\sigma) \Big] \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}).$$

Here,  $\bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma})$  is same step function defined in Appendix A. It follows from definition of step functions we have that Poisson brackets are zero for  $\sigma = \bar{\sigma}$ . However, in cases where string in curled around compactified dimension, that is cases where  $\sigma - \bar{\sigma} = 2\pi$ , we have following situation

$$\{y_{\nu_{1}}(\sigma+2\pi), y_{\nu_{2}}(\sigma)\} \cong \frac{2}{k} (\breve{\Pi}_{+}+\breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{1}\mu_{2}} \Big[ G_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}B_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}} + B_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}G_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}} \Big]$$
  
+  $\frac{1}{k} \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{3}}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{4}}(\delta^{\nu_{3}}_{\mu_{3}}\delta^{\nu_{4}}_{\mu_{4}} + \delta^{\nu_{4}}_{\mu_{3}}\delta^{\nu_{3}}_{\mu_{4}})(\breve{\Pi}_{+}+\breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{3}\mu_{1}}(\breve{\Pi}_{+}+\breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{4}\mu_{2}}$ (7.3.5)  
×  $\Big[ 4\pi G_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}B_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}}N^{\rho} + \Big(G_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}B_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}} + B_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}G_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}}\Big)x^{\rho}(\sigma) \Big].$ 

We used fact that  $\bar{H}(2\pi) = 1$ . As we had before, symbol  $N^{\mu}$  denotes winding number around compactified coordinate, if is defined as

$$x^{\mu}(\sigma + 2\pi) - x^{\mu}(\sigma) = 2\pi N^{\mu}.$$
(7.3.6)

Putting  $x^{\mu}(\sigma) = 0$  we have that Poisson bracket has linear dependence on winding number. In cases where we don't have any winding number, we still have non-commutativity that is proportional to background fields.

Using the expression for sigma derivative of  $y_{\nu}$  (7.3.1) and expression for Poisson bracket of sigma derivatives (7.3.3), we can find non-associative relations. Procedure is the same as for finding Poisson brackets of T-dual theory, we find Poisson bracket of sigma derivatives and

# 7. Bosonic T-duality of supersymmetric string with coordinate dependent RR field - general case

integrate with respect to sigma coordinate, this time integral is done trice. Going along with this procedure we have following final result

$$\{y_{\nu}(\sigma), \{y_{\nu_{1}}(\sigma_{1}), y_{\nu_{2}}(\sigma_{2})\}\} \cong \frac{G_{\nu\mu}}{k^{2}} (\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\rho\mu} \\ \times \bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{3}}(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}} C^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}_{\rho}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta} \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{4}}(\delta^{\nu_{3}}_{\mu_{3}}\delta^{\nu_{4}}_{\mu_{4}} + \delta^{\nu_{4}}_{\mu_{3}}\delta^{\nu_{3}}_{\mu_{4}}) (\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{3}\mu_{1}} (\breve{\Pi}_{+} + \breve{\Pi}_{+}^{T})^{-1\mu_{4}\mu_{2}} \qquad (7.3.7) \\ \times \left[G_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}B_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}}\bar{H}(\sigma - \sigma_{2}) + B_{\nu_{1}\mu_{1}}G_{\nu_{2}\mu_{2}}\bar{H}(\sigma - \sigma_{1})\right]\bar{H}(\sigma_{1} - \sigma_{2}).$$

Since Jacobi identity is non-zero for T-dual theory we have that coordinate dependent RR field produces non-associative theory. However putting  $\sigma_1 = \sigma_2 = \bar{\sigma}$  and  $\sigma = \bar{\sigma} + 2\pi$  we have that Jacobi identity disappears

$$\{y_{\nu}(\bar{\sigma}+2\pi), \{y_{\nu_{1}}(\bar{\sigma}), y_{\nu_{2}}(\bar{\sigma})\}\} \cong 0.$$
(7.3.8)

Comparing these non-commutative relations with ones obtained in Chapter 5, we can observe that theory now has both different non-commutative and non-associative structure.

## 8. Conclusion

At the end of this thesis we would like to present general summary of the work that has been done thus far, as well as possibility of future extension of said work. It should also be stated that results that have been presented, while original, are natural progression of work that has been done by string field community and that they should not be examined in isolation. With such rich history and vastness that accompanies string theory, author hopes that work exhibited in this thesis was more or less self contained and that it did not leave too many readers confused.

Work done in this thesis, while covering few different topics, could best be examined by splitting them in two main parts, first part that focuses on work based on bosonic string and second one where we focus on work based on type II supertring. Even though both parts are connected with overarching methodologies and some results can be carried over from one part to other, this split is best thought of as ideological one where we make separation between theory which is toy model and one which has a chance for describing real world. Methodology that connected these two groups was the Buscher [36, 43] procedure as well as its generalization [46, 45]. This procedure was instrumental in obtaining T-dual theory as well as transformation laws that connected coordinates of original and dual theories. Tasked with such monumental task, it is a miracle that this procedure is rather simple, where whole procedure can be summarised in few steps. First step was to examine if action was invariant to translational symmetry and if it was then second step would be to localize this symmetry. Localization was done by interchanging all partial derivatives with covariant ones. This way we introduced additional gauge fields which, in order to obtain correct T-dual theory, would have to be eliminated. Elimination of gauge fields marks the beginning of third step and this is done by introducing Lagrange multiplier term into action. Following this, fourth step is utilizing gauge freedom to fix starting coordinates to constants which leaves action that only depends on gauge fields and Lagrange multipliers. Finding equations of motion for Lagrange multipliers and gauge fields, where inserting the latter into action, we obtain T-dual theory. There are two main extensions to this procedure, case when background fields depend on coordinates and case when we do not have translational symmetry. First case can be dualized by introducing invariant coordinate in step two, this coordinate is given as a integral along path of covariant derivative and with its introduction T-dual theory becomes non-local. Second one of these extensions is accomplished by neglecting steps one, two and three and introducing auxiliary action which is invariant to translations. By sheer luck, shape of auxiliary is the same one as of the action which has been gauge fixed. Both extensions to procedure produce non-local T-dual theory.

First major topic that was examined in this thesis was bosonic string with coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramond field. While this theory has been examined before by many different authors [10, 14, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83], it was not sufficiently examined with

#### 8. Conclusion

apparatus of Buscher procedure. Even though this analysis is original it should be best thought out as a stepping stone for more physically relevant case, stepping stone where we get to familiarize ourselves more with generalized Bushcer procedure. In Chapter 3 we began our work on this theory by performing T-duality first along coordinates on which background fields did not depend, namely x and y coordinates and finally dualizing along direction on which Kalb-Ramond field depended, z coordinate. By doing T-duality in this order we have gone through three distinct theories which had different geometric interpretations. After first dualization we obtained twisted torus, theory which was well defined both locally and globally. Second dualization produces theory which was named torus with Q flux and while this theory was locally well defined we could not say the same for its global structure. Final dualization produced theory which was non-local and non-commutative, theory with R flux. By examining transformation laws of final theory we were able to obtain Poisson brackets between T-dual coordinates which possessed both non-commutative and non-associative properties. Results that are obtained in this chapter could also have been obtained by only utilizing standard Buscher procedure along with non trivial winding conditions as has been done in [10, 14, 74, 75, 79].

Having saw what properties emerge in fully dualized bosonic string with coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramond field, in Chapter 4 we examined if can obtain these properties earlier in dualization chain by altering order of T-duality. We focused on duality chain that starts with z coordinate and finishes with x coordinate. This way we showed that right from the first T-duality we obtain theory that is non-local, however this theory was still commutative. Only after second dualization, we obtained one half of non-commutative relations and after finding fully dualized theory all non-commutative relations were salvaged. By obtaining T-duality by two different directions we observed that non-commutativity is only possible after performing dualization along coordinate on which background fields depend. This way only T-dual coordinates of ones that appear in background fields are non-commutative.

Having exhausted bosonic string case, rest of this thesis was focused on type II superstring in pure spinor formalism [26, 27, 28, 29] with coordinate dependent Ramond-Ramond field. All remaining fields were constants or set to zero. This choice of the fields was motivated by papers [31, 13] where it has been speculated that this exact combination of fields would produce noncommutative relations between fermionic coordinates that are proportional to bosonic ones. In order to find transformation laws and T-dual theory we utilized two additional assumptions, first was that Ramond-Ramond field demended only infinitesimally on coordinates and second one was that term which contained coordinate was antisymmetric. Which all these assumptions we have conducted T-duality of bosonic coordinates in Chapter 5. Since background field depended on all bosonic coordinates we had to utilize generalized Buscher procedure and in turn obtained T-dual theory was non-local. Transformation laws that we obtained we combined with momenta of original theory in order to transcribe them in canonical form. Having transcribed dual coordiantes as linear combination of momenta and coordinates of original theory we found non-commutative relations of T-dual theory. By enforcing special conditions on world-sheet coordinate  $\sigma$ , we found out how non-commutativity depends on winding numbers  $N_{\mu}$ . It should also be mentioned that in this chapter we subjected T-dual theory under dualization of dual coordinates, this way we were able to obtain original theory in turn giving us confirmation that T-dualization was carried on correctly.

After examining bosonic duality we focused on fermionic duality of type II superstring. Having seen, in case of bosonic string, that non-commutativity emerges only when we dualize along coordinate on which background fields depend we wanted to see if same rule applies in fermionic case. In Chapter 6 we first carried out fermionic T-duality of previously non-dualized theory where we found out that this new theory is commutative. Next, we dualized theory which has already been dualized along bosonic coordinates obtaining fully dual theory. In this case we had emergence of two new Poisson brackets, brackets between dual bosonic and dual fermionic coordinates. However we have not been able to prove that hypothesis from papers [31, 13] is correct. There were no additional Poisson brackets between two fermionic coordinates. Finally, for completion sake, we have also conducted bosonic dualization of theory that has been only dualized along bosonic coordinates, proving that these two T-dualities commute.

Final part of this thesis focused again on bosonic duality of type II superstring but with one less assumption imposed on Ramond-Ramond field. We examined how properties of transformation laws and dual theory when field has both symmetric and antisymmetric part. This small modification removed translational invariance of the theory and made us rely on extension of Buscher procedure that works on such cases. Overcoming this minor setback by working with auxiliary action, we proceed to find transformation laws. By introducing symmetric part of the field we were not able to obtain  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions that have appeared in previous dualizations but have instead derived their generalization,  $N(\kappa^{\pm})$  functions. These functions were not only dependent of coordinates and their derivatives like their predecessor but were also dependent on choice of path in line integral that appeared in definition of invariant coordinate. This sudden increase in complexity made it impossible to obtain canonical transformation laws in manner that was similar as before. We had to rely both on equations of motion as well as canonical momenta of original theory. Having obtained canonical transformation laws we were finally able to deduce non-commutative relations of T-dual theory which, when compared to case with antisymmetric field, are now different. On the other hand, since neither  $\beta^{\pm}$  nor  $N(\kappa^{\pm})$  functions do not play any role in T-dual theory, T-dual action that was obtained was the same as in Chapter 5. Similarly as we did with antisymmetric field, we also performed T-duality of already dualized theory where we were able to return to starting action.

Having done all this work, following question arises: What to do next? There are two main directions that extension to this work can follow. First extension focuses on bosonic string where instead of following standard wisdom and working only with coordinate dependent Kalb-Ramond field we could incorporate also coordinate dependent space-time metric. This extension would produce transformation laws that depend on  $N(\kappa^{\pm})$  functions thus making it possible to obtain non-commutativity for such field configurations. Furthermore this line or research would be able to shed some light on type of changes that affect nontrivial spacetime metric after T-duality. Other possible line of research is focused on type II superstring where we also include fermionic coordinates in background fields. Since background fields are all interconnected it is reasonable to expect that such inclusion would produce configuration where no field can remain constant. Having seen what are the requirements for non-commutativity, we wager that such configuration would certainly produce non-commutative relations between fermionic coordinates. However, we are not certain what would be the form these relations take.

- [1] H.S. Snyder, Quantized space-time, Phys. Rev. 71 (1947) 38.
- [2] M.R. Douglas and N. A. Nekrasov, Noncommutative field theory, Rev. Mod. Phys. 73 (2001) 977–1029.
- [3] R. Szabo, Quantum field theory on noncommutative spaces, Physics Reports 378 (2003) 207-99.
- [4] Michael Green, John Schwarz, Edward Witten *Superstring Theory*, Cambridge University Press, 2012.
- [5] B. Zwiebach, A First Course in String Theory, Cambridge University Press, (2004).
- [6] J. Polchinski, String theory, Volume I, Cambridge University Press, (1998).
- [7] J. Polchinski, String theory, Volume II, Cambridge University Press, (1998).
- [8] K. Becker, M. Becker and J. Schwarz, *String Theory and M-Theory: A Modern Introduction*, Cambridge University Press, (2007).
- [9] N. Seiberg and E. Witten, *String theory and noncommutative geometry*, *JHEP* 09 (1999) 032.
- [10] D. Lüst, T-duality and closed string non-commutative (doubled) geometry, JHEP 12 (2010) 084.
- [11] N. Berkovits, J. Maldacena, Fermionic T-Duality, Dual Superconformal Symmetry, and the Amplitude/Wilson Loop Connection, JHEP 09 (2008) 062.
- [12] J. H. Schwarz, P. van Nieuwenhuizen Speculations concerning a fermionic substructure of space-time, Lett. Nuovo Cimento 34, 21–25 (1982).
- [13] J. de Boer, P. A. Grassi, P. van Nieuwenhuizen Non-commutative superspace from string theory, Physics Letters B 574 (2003) 98.
- [14] D. Andriot, M. Larfors, D. Lüst and P. Patalong, (Non-)commutative closed string on T-dual toroidal backgrounds, JHEP 06 (2013) 021.
- [15] C.G. Callan Jr., E.J. Martinec, M.J. Perry and D. Friedan, Strings in Background Fields, Nucl. Phys. B 262 (1985) 593.

- [16] C. G. Callan, D. Friedan, E. J. Martinec, M. J. Perry Strings in background fields, Nucl. Phys. B262 (1985) 593.
- [17] J. Scherk, J. H. Schwarz, Dual models for non-hadrons, Nucl. Phys. B 81, (1974) 118-144.
- [18] T. Yoneya, Geometry, Gravity and Dual Strings, Prog. Theor. Phys. 56 (1976) 1310.
- [19] D. Friedan, Nonlinear Models in  $2 + \epsilon$  Dimensions, Phys. Rev. Lett. 45 (1980) 1057.
- [20] L. Alvarez-Gaume, D. Z. Freedman, Ricci-flat kahler manifolds and supersymmetry, Physics Letters B 94 (1980) 171-173.
- [21] L. Alvarez-Gaume, D. Z. Freedman, S. Mukhi, The background field method and the ultraviolet structure of the supersymmetric nonlinear σ-model, Ann. Phys. 134 (1981) 85.
- [22] D. Nemeschansky and S. Yankielowicz, it Critical Dimension of String Theories in Curved Space, *Phys, Rev. Lett.* 54 (1985) 620.
- [23] E. Witten, Nonabelian bosonization in two dimensions, Comm. Math. Phys. 92 (1984) 455-472.
- [24] T. L. Curtright, C. K. Zachos, Geometry, Topology, and Supersymmetry in Nonlinear Models, Phys. Rev. Lett. 53 (1984) 1799
- [25] A. M. Polyakov, Quantum Geometry of Bosonic Strings, Phys. Lett. B, 103 (1981) 207-210.
- [26] N. Berkovits, P. Howe, Ten-Dimensional Supergravity Constraints from the Pure Spinor Formalism for the Superstring, Nucl. Phys. B635 (2002) 75.
- [27] P. A. Grassi, G. Policastro, P. van Nieuwenhuizen, The Massless Spectrum of Covariant Superstrings, JHEP 11 (2002) 004.
- [28] P. A. Grassi, G. Policastro, P. van Nieuwenhuizen, On the BRST Cohomology of Superstrings with/without Pure Spinors, Adv. Theor. Math. Phys. 7 (2003) 499.
- [29] P. A. Grassi, G. Policastro, P. van Nieuwenhuizen, The Covariant Quantum Superstring and Superparticle from their Classical Actions, Phys. Lett. B553 (2003) 96.
- [30] N. Berkovits, Explaining the pure spinor formalism for the superstring, JHEP 01 (2008) 065.
- [31] P. A. Grassi, L. Tamassia, Vertex Operators for Closed Superstrings, JHEP 07 (2004) 071.

- [32] N. Berkovits, Towards Covariant Quantization of the Supermembrane, JHEP 09 (2002) 051.
- [33] W. Siegel, Classical Superstring Mechanics, Nucl. Phys. B 263 (1986) 93.
- [34] J. P. Harnad, S. Shnider, Constraints and field equations for ten dimensional super Yang-Mills theory, Commun. Math. Phys. 106 (1986) 183.
- [35] H. Ooguri, J. Rahmfeld, H. Robins, J. Tannenhauser, Holography in superspace, JHEP 07 (2000) 045.
- [36] T.H.Buscher, A symmetry of the string background field equations, Phys. Lett. B 194 (1987) 59.
- [37] M. Roček and E.P. Verlinde, Duality, quotients and currents, Nucl. Phys. B 373 (1992) 630.
- [38] E. Alvarez, L. Alvarez-Gaume, Y. Lozano, An Introduction to T-Duality in String Theory Nucl. Phys. Proc. Suppl. 41 (1995) 1.
- [39] A. Giveon, M. Porrati, E. Rabinovici, Target Space Duality in String Theory, Phys. Rep. 244 (1994) 77.
- [40] B. Nikolic and B. Sazdovic, D5-brane type I superstring background fields in terms of type IIB ones by canonical method and T-duality approach, Nucl. Phys. B 836 (2010) 100-126.
- [41] D. S. Berman, D. C. Thompson, Duality symmetric string and M-theory, Phys. Rept. 566 (2014) 1.
- [42] C. Montonen, D. I. Olive, Magnetic monopoles as gauge particles?, Phys. Lett. B 72 (1977) 117-120.
- [43] T.H. Buscher, Path Integral Derivation of Quantum Duality in Nonlinear  $\sigma$ models, Phys. Lett. B 201 (1988) 466.
- [44] Lj. Davidović, B. Nikolić and B. Sazdović, *T-duality diagram for a weakly curved background*, Eur. Phys. J. C 75 (2015) 576.
- [45] Lj. Davidović and B. Sazdović, *T*-dualization in a curved background in absence of a global symmetry, JHEP 11 (2015) 119.
- [46] Lj. Davidović and B. Sazdović, T-duality in a weakly curved background, Eur. Phys. J. C 74 (2014) 2683.
- [47] Lj. Davidović, B. Nikolić and B. Sazdović, Canonical approach to the closed string non-commutativity, Eur. Phys. J. C 74 (2014) 2734.
- [48] Lj. Davidovic, B. Sazdovic, The T-dual symmetries of a bosonic string, Eur. Phys. J. C 78 (2018) 600.

- [49] L. Cornalba, R. Schiappa, Nonassociative Star Product Deformations for D-Brane World-Volumes in Curved Backgrounds, Commun. Math. Phys. 225, (2002) 33–66.
- [50] L. Cornalba, M. S. Costa, R. Schiappa, D-brane dynamics in constant Ramond-Ramond potentials, S-duality and noncommutative geometry, Adv. Theor. Math. Phys. 9, (2005) 355-406.
- [51] D. Andriot, M. Larfors, D. Luest, P. Patalong, (Non-)commutative closed string on T-dual toroidal backgrounds, JHEP 06 (2013) 021.
- [52] A. Connes, M.R. Douglas and A.S. Schwarz, Noncommutative geometry and matrix theory: Compactification on tori, JHEP 02 (1998) 003.
- [53] L.N. Chang, D. Minic, A. Roman, C. Sun and T. Takeuchi, On the Physics of the Minimal Length: The Question of Gauge Invariance, Int. J. Mod. Phys. A 31 (2016) 1630012.
- [54] B. Nikolić and D. Obrić, Noncommutativity and nonassociativity of closed bosonic string on T-dual toroidal backgrounds, Fortsch. Phys. 66 (2018) 1800009.
- [55] B. Sazdovic, Dilaton field induces a commutative Dp-brane coordinate, Eur. Phys. J. C 44 (2005) 599–605.
- [56] B. Nikolic and B. Sazdovic, Noncommutativity in space-time extended by Liouville field, Adv. Theor. Math. Phys. 14 (2010) 1, 1-27.
- [57] M.R. Douglas and C.M. Hull, *D*-branes and the noncommutative torus, JHEP 02 (1998) 008.
- [58] V. Schomerus, *D-branes and deformation quantization*, *JHEP* 06 (1999) 030.
- [59] F. Ardalan, H. Arfaei and M.M. Sheikh-Jabbari, Noncommutative geometry from strings and branes, JHEP 02 (1999) 016.
- [60] C.-S. Chu and P.-M. Ho, Noncommutative open string and D-brane, Nucl. Phys. B 550 (1999) 151.
- [61] F. Ardalan, H. Arfaei and M. M. Sheikh-Jabbari, Dirac quantization of open strings and noncommutativity in branes, Nucl. Phys. B 576 (2000) 578.
- [62] C.-S. Chu and P.-M. Ho, Constrained quantization of open string in background B field and noncommutative D-brane, Nucl. Phys. B 568 (2000) 447.
- [63] T. Lee, Canonical quantization of open string and noncommutative geometry, Phys. Rev. D 62 (2000) 024022.
- [64] B. Nikolić and B. Sazdović, Gauge symmetries change the number of Dp-brane dimensions, Phys. Rev. D 74 (2006) 045024.
- [65] B. Nikolić and B. Sazdović, Gauge symmetries decrease the number of Dp-brane dimensions, II (Inclusion of the Liouville term), Phys. Rev. D 75 (2007) 085011.

- [66] D. Latas, V. Radovanović and J. Trampetić, Non-commutative SU(N) gauge theories and asymptotic freedom, Phys. Rev. D 76 (2007) 085006.
- [67] M. Burić, V. Radovanović and J. Trampetić, *The One-loop renormalization of the gauge sector in the noncommutative standard model*, *JHEP* 03 (2007) 030.
- [68] D.N. Blaschke, H. Grosse and J.-C. Wallet, Slavnov-Taylor identities, noncommutative gauge theories and infrared divergences, JHEP 06 (2013) 038.
- [69] C.P. Martin and C. Tamarit, Noncommutative N = 1 super Yang-Mills, the Seiberg-Witten map and UV divergences, JHEP 11 (2009) 092.
- [70] M. Evans and B. A. Ovrut, Symmetry in string theory, Phys. Rev. D 39 (1989) 3016.
- [71] M. Evans and B. A. Ovrut, Deformations of conformal field theories and symmetries of the string, Phys. Rev. D 41 (1990) 3149.
- [72] B. Melic, K. Passek-Kumericki and J. Trampetić,  $K \to \pi \gamma$  decay and space-time noncommutativity, Phys. Rev. D 72 (2005) 057502.
- [73] M. Burić, D. Latas, V. Radovanović and J. Trampetić, Nonzero Z → πγ decays in the renormalizable gauge sector of the noncommutative standard model, Phys. Rev. D 75 (2007) 097701.
- [74] D. Andriot, O. Hohm, M. Larfors, D. Lüst and P. Patalong, A geometric action for non-geometric fluxes, Phys. Rev. Lett. 108 (2012) 261602.
- [75] D. Andriot, O. Hohm, M. Larfors, D. Lüst and P. Patalong, Non-Geometric Fluxes in Supergravity and Double Field Theory, Fortsch. Phys. 60 (2012) 1150.
- [76] R. Blumenhagen, A. Deser, E. Plauschinn, F. Rennecke and C. Schmid, The intriguing structure of non-geometric frames in string theory, Fortsch. Phys. 61 (2013) 893.
- [77] R. Blumenhagen, A. Deser, E. Plauschinn and F. Rennecke, Non-geometric strings, symplectic gravity and differential geometry of Lie algebroids, JHEP 02 (2013) 122.
- [78] R. Blumenhagen, A. Deser, E. Plauschinn and F. Rennecke, A bi-invariant Einstein-Hilbert action for the non-geometric string, Phys. Lett. B 720 (2013) 215.
- [79] D. Lüst, Twisted Poisson Structures and Non-commutative/non-associative Closed String Geometry, PoS(CORFU2011)086 (2011)
- [80] R. Blumenhagen, A. Deser, D. Lüst, E. Plauschinn and F. Rennecke, Nongeometric Fluxes, Asymmetric Strings and Nonassociative Geometry, J. Phys. A 44 (2011) 385401.

- [81] C. Condeescu, I. Florakis and D. Lüst, Asymmetric Orbifolds, Non-Geometric Fluxes and Non-Commutativity in Closed String Theory, JHEP 04 (2012) 121.
- [82] J. Shelton, W. Taylor and B. Wecht, Nongeometric flux compactifications, JHEP 10 (2005) 085.
- [83] A. Dabholkar and C. Hull, Generalised T-duality and non-geometric backgrounds, JHEP 05 (2006) 009.
- [84] S. Meljanac, A. Samsarov, J. Trampetić and M. Wohlgenannt, Scalar field propagation in the  $\phi^3 \kappa$ -Minkowski model, JHEP 12 (2011) 010.
- [85] S. Meljanac, A. Samsarov, M. Stojić and K.S. Gupta, κ-Minkowski space-time and the star product realizations, Eur. Phys. J. C 53 (2008) 295.
- [86] D. Kovačević and S. Meljanac, Kappa-Minkowski spacetime, Kappa-Poincaré Hopf algebra and realizations, J. Phys. A 45 (2012) 135208.
- [87] E. Harikumar, T. Jurić and S. Meljanac, *Electrodynamics on κ-Minkowski space-time*, Phys. Rev. D 84 (2011) 085020.
- [88] M. Dimitrijević and L. Jonke, A twisted look on kappa-Minkowski: U(1) gauge theory, JHEP 12 (2011) 080.
- [89] A. Pachol, κ-Minkowski spacetime: Mathematical formalism and applications in Planck scale physics, Ph.D. thesis, Wroclaw U., 2011.
- [90] R. Blumenhagen, I. Brunner, V. Kupriyanov and D. Lüst, Bootstrapping noncommutative gauge theories from  $L_{\infty}$  algebras, JHEP 05 (2018) 097.
- [91] B. Nikolić, D. Obrić, Directly from H-flux to the family of three nonlocal R-flux theories, JHEP 03 (2019) 136.
- [92] E. Alvarez, L. Álvarez-Gaumé, J.L.F. Barbon and Y. Lozano, Some global aspects of duality in string theory, Nucl. Phys. B 415 (1994) 71.
- [93] C.M. Hull, Global aspects of T-duality, gauged  $\sigma$ -models and T-folds, JHEP 10 (2007) 057.
- [94] X. C. de la Ossa and F. Quevedo, Duality symmetries from nonAbelian isometries in string theory, Nucl. Phys. B 403 (1993) 377.
- [95] A. Chatzistavrakidis, A. Deser and L. Jonke, *T*-duality without isometry via extended gauge symmetries of 2D  $\sigma$ -models, JHEP 01 (2016) 154.
- [96] B. Sazdović, T-duality as coordinates permutation in double space for weakly curved background, JHEP 08 (2015) 055.
- [97] B. Nikolić, D. Obrić, B. Sazdović, Noncommutativity and Nonassociativity of Type II Superstring with Coordinate Dependent RR Field, Fortschritte der Physik 70 (2022) 2200048.

- [98] B. Nikolić, D. Obrić, Combined Fermionic and Bosonic T-duality of Type II Superstring Theory with Coordinate Dependent RR Field, Fortschr. Phys. (2022) 2200160.
- [99] I. Bakhmatov, D. S. Berman, Exploring fermionic T-duality, Nucl. Phys. B 832 (2010) 89-108.
- [100] K. Sfetsos, K. Siampos, Daniel C. Thompson, Canonical pure spinor (Fermionic) T-duality, Class. Quantum Grav. 28 (2011) 05.
- [101] Niklas Beisert, Riccardo Ricci, Arkady Tseytlin, Martin Wolf, Dual Superconformal Symmetry from  $AdS_5 \times S^5$  Superstring Integrability, Phys. Rev. D 78 (2008) 126004.
- [102] B. Nikolić, B. Sazdović, Fermionic T-duality in fermionic double space, Nucl. Phys. B 917 (2017) 105.
- [103] B. Nikolić, D. Obrić, Noncommutativity and nonassociativity of type II superstring with coordinate dependent RR field — the general case, JHEP 12 (2022) 078.

### A. Light-cone coordinates

Throughout this thesis we have often relied on usage of light-cone (lc) coordinates. Here we will give basic overview of both lc coordinates and some tensors expressed in this basis. We begin by defining lc coordinates as

$$\xi^{\pm} = \frac{1}{2}(\tau \pm \sigma).$$
 (A.0.1)

This definition naturally lends itself to introduction of corresponding partial derivatives

$$\partial_{\pm} \equiv \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi^{\pm}} = \partial_{\tau} \pm \partial_{\sigma}. \tag{A.0.2}$$

With light-cone coordinates and their partial derivatives defined we can cast our gaze on two tensors that endow string theory world-sheet, two dimensional Levi-Civita tensor and worldsheet metric tensor.

We begin first with two dimensional Levi-Civita tensor  $\epsilon^{mn}$  which is defined in  $(\tau, \sigma)$  basis as  $\epsilon^{\tau\sigma} = -1$ . Consequently, in light-cone basis the form of this tensor is

$$\epsilon_{lc} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \frac{1}{2} \\ -\frac{1}{2} & 0 \end{pmatrix}. \tag{A.0.3}$$

On the other hand the flat world-sheet metric is of the following form in  $(\tau, \sigma)$  and light-cone basis. respectively

$$\eta = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \eta_{lc} = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{1}{2} & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{1}{2} \end{pmatrix}.$$
 (A.0.4)

In both cases subscript lc denotes light-cone basis.

## **B.** Poisson brackets

Throughout this thesis, we have seen that T-dual transformation laws connect derivatives of Tdual coordinates with coordinates and momenta of initial theory. While initial theory satisfies standard Poisson brackets, in order to find Poisson brackets for T-dual theory, we first need to find Poisson brackets between  $\sigma$  derivatives of T-dual coordinates. This type of Poisson bracket will, in general case, be some function of initial coordinates, Dirac delta functions and their derivatives with respect to  $\sigma$ . Having this in mind, general case for our Poisson brackets will have following form

$$\{A'(\sigma), B'(\bar{\sigma})\} = U'(\sigma)\delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}) + V(\sigma)\delta'(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}), \qquad (B.0.1)$$

where  $\delta'(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}) \equiv \partial_{\sigma} \delta(\sigma - \bar{\sigma})$ . For terms  $A'(\sigma)$ ,  $U'(\sigma)$  and  $B'(\bar{\sigma})$ , symbol ' stands for partial derivative with respect to  $\sigma$  and  $\bar{\sigma}$ , respectively. If we want to calculate the Poisson bracket

$$\{A(\sigma), B(\bar{\sigma})\},\$$

first we have to calculate the following one

$$\{\Delta A(\sigma, \sigma_0), \Delta B(\bar{\sigma}, \bar{\sigma}_0)\}, \qquad (B.0.2)$$

where

$$\Delta A(\sigma, \sigma_0) = \int_{\sigma_0}^{\sigma} dx A'(x) = A(\sigma) - A(\sigma_0), \quad \Delta B(\bar{\sigma}, \bar{\sigma}_0) = \int_{\bar{\sigma}_0}^{\bar{\sigma}} dx B'(x) = B(\bar{\sigma}) - B(\bar{\sigma}_0).$$
(B.0.3)

Substituting the expressions (B.0.3) into (B.0.2), we have

$$\{\Delta A(\sigma,\sigma_0), \Delta B(\bar{\sigma},\bar{\sigma}_0)\} = \int_{\sigma_0}^{\sigma} dx \int_{\bar{\sigma}_0}^{\bar{\sigma}} dy \ \left[U'(x)\delta(x-y) + V(x)\delta'(x-y)\right]. \tag{B.0.4}$$

After integration over y we get

$$\{\Delta A(\sigma,\sigma_0), \Delta B(\bar{\sigma},\bar{\sigma}_0)\} = \int_{\sigma_0}^{\sigma} dx \{U'(x) \left[\bar{H}(x-\bar{\sigma}_0) - \bar{H}(x-\bar{\sigma})\right] + V(x) \left[\delta(x-\bar{\sigma}_0) - \delta(x-\bar{\sigma})\right]\},\tag{B.0.5}$$

where we utilized following property of Dirac delta functions

$$\int_{\sigma_0}^{\sigma} d\eta f(\eta) \delta(\eta - \bar{\eta}) = f(\bar{\eta}) \left[ \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\eta}) - \bar{H}(\sigma_0 - \bar{\eta}) \right], \tag{B.0.6}$$

and where  $\overline{H}(x)$  is Heaviside step function defined as

$$\bar{H}(x) = \int_0^x d\eta \delta(\eta) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \left[ x + 2\sum_{n\geq 1} \frac{1}{n} \sin(nx) \right] = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } x = 0\\ 1/2 & \text{if } 0 < x < 2\pi \\ 1 & \text{if } x = 2\pi \end{cases}$$
(B.0.7)

and  $\delta(x) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{inx}$ . Finally, integrating over x, we obtain

$$\{\Delta A(\sigma,\sigma_0), \Delta B(\bar{\sigma},\bar{\sigma}_0)\} = U(\sigma)[\bar{H}(\sigma-\bar{\sigma}_0)-\bar{H}(\sigma-\bar{\sigma})] - U(\sigma_0)[\bar{H}(\sigma_0-\bar{\sigma}_0)-\bar{H}(\sigma_0-\bar{\sigma})] - U(\bar{\sigma}_0)[\bar{H}(\sigma-\bar{\sigma}_0)-\bar{H}(\sigma_0-\bar{\sigma}_0)] + U(\bar{\sigma})[\bar{H}(\sigma-\bar{\sigma})-\bar{H}(\sigma_0-\bar{\sigma})] + V(\bar{\sigma}_0)[\bar{H}(\sigma-\bar{\sigma}_0)-\bar{H}(\sigma_0-\bar{\sigma}_0] - V(\bar{\sigma})[\bar{H}(\sigma-\bar{\sigma})-\bar{H}(\sigma_0-\bar{\sigma})].$$
(B.0.8)

From the last expression, using (B.0.3), we extract the searched Poisson bracket

$$\{A(\sigma), B(\bar{\sigma})\} = -[U(\sigma) - U(\bar{\sigma}) + V(\bar{\sigma})]\bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\sigma}).$$
(B.0.9)

In order to calculate Jacobiator we have to find Poisson brackets of type  $\{y(\sigma), x(\bar{\sigma})\}$ , where  $y(\sigma)$  is coordinate T-dual to initial one  $x(\sigma)$ . Having this in mind, we start with the following Poisson bracket

$$\{\Delta y(\sigma, \sigma_0), x(\bar{\sigma})\} = \{\int_{\sigma_0}^{\sigma} d\eta y'(\eta), x(\bar{\sigma})\}, \qquad (B.0.10)$$

and using T-dual transformation law in canonical form

$$\pi \cong \kappa y', \tag{B.0.11}$$

we get

$$\{\Delta y(\sigma, \sigma_0), x(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong \frac{1}{\kappa} \{\int_{\sigma_0}^{\sigma} d\eta \pi(\eta), x(\bar{\sigma})\}, \qquad (B.0.12)$$

where  $\pi(\sigma)$  is momentum canonically conjugated to the coordinate  $x(\sigma)$ . Initial theory is geometric one which variables satisfy standard Poisson algebra, so, the final result is of the form

$$\{\Delta y(\sigma,\sigma_0), x(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong -\frac{1}{\kappa} \left[ \bar{H}(\sigma-\bar{\sigma}) - \bar{H}(\sigma_0-\bar{\sigma}) \right] \to \{y(\sigma), x(\bar{\sigma})\} \cong -\frac{1}{\kappa} \bar{H}(\sigma-\bar{\sigma}) \,. \quad (B.0.13)$$

## C. Obtaining $\beta_{\mu}^{\pm}$ terms

During our examination of both bosonic string theory and superstring theory we have several instances where we had to find variation of term that contained  $\Delta V$ . Variation of this term gave rise to  $\beta^{\pm}_{\mu}(V)$  functions in T-dual transformation laws. While in case of bosonic string theory we have slightly touched this issue, here we would like to give proper exhibition that this problem entails. Even through we focus only on superstring case procedure that will be presented is applicable to both cases, bosonic case and superstring case.

We decided to obtain  $\beta^{\pm}_{\mu}(V)$  functions for superstring however, we will use following substitutions  $\partial_{+}\bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} = \partial_{+}\bar{\theta}^{\alpha} + v^{\nu_{1}}_{+}\bar{\Psi}^{\alpha}_{\nu_{1}}, \ \partial_{-}\Theta^{\beta} = \partial_{-}\theta^{\beta} + \Psi^{\beta}_{\nu_{2}}v^{\nu_{2}}_{-}$ , also we will use  $F_{\alpha\beta\rho}$  to represent term containing infinitesimal constant, in order to bring this exposition as close as we can to bosonic string case.

$$\int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \partial_{+} \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \Delta V^{(0)\rho} \partial_{-} \Theta^{\beta} = \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \epsilon^{mn} \partial_{m} \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \Delta V^{(0)\rho} \partial_{n} \Theta^{\beta}$$

$$= \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \frac{1}{2} \epsilon^{mn} \partial_{m} \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \Delta V^{(0)\rho} \partial_{n} \Theta^{\beta} - \frac{1}{2} \epsilon^{mn} \partial_{n} \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \Delta V^{(0)\rho} \partial_{m} \Theta^{\beta} \Big]$$

$$= -\frac{1}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \Big[ \epsilon^{mn} \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \partial_{m} \Delta V^{(0)\rho} \partial_{n} \Theta^{\beta} - \epsilon^{mn} \partial_{n} \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \partial_{m} \Delta V^{(0)\rho} \Theta^{\beta} \Big] \qquad (C.0.1)$$

$$= -\frac{1}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \epsilon^{mn} \partial_{m} \Delta V^{(0)\rho} \Big[ \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \partial_{n} \Theta^{\beta} - \partial_{n} \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \Theta^{\beta} \Big]$$

$$= -\frac{1}{2} \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \epsilon^{mn} v_{m}^{\rho} \Big[ \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \partial_{n} \Theta^{\beta} - \partial_{n} \bar{\Theta}^{\alpha} F_{\alpha\beta\rho} \Theta^{\beta} \Big] = \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi v_{m}^{\rho} \beta_{\rho}^{m}.$$

Variation with respect to gauge field  $v_{\pm}^{\rho}$ , and setting  $F_{\alpha\beta\rho} = -(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_1}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_1\beta_1}(f^{-1})_{\beta_1\beta}$  produces desired  $\beta_{\rho}^{\pm}$  functions (5.2.14), (5.2.15) in equations of motion (5.2.13). On the other hand setting  $F_{\alpha\beta\rho}$  to 2H (factor of 2 comes from the fact that term containing Kalb-Ramond field was already transcribed as sum of two parts, effectively having two identical terms to one given in first line of above equation),  $\bar{\Theta}^{\alpha}$  to  $\gamma_1$  and  $\Theta^{\alpha}$  to  $\gamma_2$  we obtain  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions for bosonic case (3.2.53). Fermionic beta functions are obtained in exactly the same manner where only difference stems from using gauge fields  $\bar{u}_{\pm}$  and  $u_{\pm}$  instead of  $v_{\pm}$ .

Here we have used the property that  $F_{\alpha\beta\rho}$ , is antisymmetric under exchange of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ , this, in combination with the fact that we can express  $\partial_+\bar{\Theta}\partial_-\Theta$  as  $\epsilon^{nm}\partial_n\bar{\Theta}\partial_m\Theta$ , removes all terms proportional to  $\partial_+\partial_-$ , using identity  $\epsilon^{mn}\bar{\Theta}\partial_m\partial_n\Theta = 0$ . While surface terms disappear from the requirement that we are working with trivial topology

It should be noted that  $\beta_{\pm\mu}(V)$  functions are not unique, we could have obtained different function simply by not using symmetrization in (C.0.1). In case of non-symmetric  $\beta_{\pm\mu}(V)$ , all results that have been obtained would take a simpler form. We have chosen to work with antisymmetric function because results that are deduced from this case can be easily reduced, by neglecting terms, to simpler case.

## **D.** Obtaining $N(\kappa^{\pm})$ terms

Functions  $N(\kappa^{\pm})$  emerged in Chapter 7 during calculation of T-dual transformation laws as a consequence of variation of term that was proportional to  $\Delta V$ . Here we will present derivation of this function.

$$\frac{\delta \left(F^{-1}(\Delta V)\right)_{\alpha\beta}}{\delta v_{+}^{\mu}(\kappa)} = -(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\rho}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\int_{P}d\xi'^{m}\frac{\delta v_{m}^{\rho}(\xi')}{\delta v_{+}^{\mu}(\kappa)} = \\
= -(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\int_{P}d\xi'^{+}\delta(\xi'^{+}-\kappa^{+})\delta(\xi'^{-}-\kappa^{-}) \\
= -(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\int_{\xi_{0}^{+}}^{\xi^{+}}du\delta(\xi'(t)^{+}-\kappa^{+})\delta(\xi'^{-}(t)-\kappa^{-}) \\
= -(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\int_{\xi_{0}^{+}}^{\xi^{+}}du\delta(u-\kappa^{+})\delta\left(\xi'^{-}((\xi'^{+})^{-1}(u))-\kappa^{-}\right) \\
= -(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}C_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}\delta\left(\xi'^{-}((\xi'^{+})^{-1}(\kappa^{+}))-\kappa^{-}\right)\left[\bar{H}(\xi^{+}-\kappa^{+})-\bar{H}(\xi_{0}^{+}-\kappa^{+})\right] \\
= -(f^{-1})_{\alpha\alpha_{1}}G_{\mu}^{\alpha_{1}\beta_{1}}(f^{-1})_{\beta_{1}\beta}N(\kappa^{+}).$$

In third line we have parametrized the path with parameter t where  $\xi'^+(t_i) = \xi_0^+$  and  $\xi'^+(t_f) = \xi^+$ . In fourth line we introduced substitution  $u = \xi'^+(t)$ , in delta function this substitute is inverted. Fifth line is obtained by using following integration rule for Dirac delta function

$$\int_{\sigma_0}^{\sigma} d\eta f(\eta) \delta(\eta - \bar{\eta}) = f(\bar{\eta}) \left[ \bar{H}(\sigma - \bar{\eta}) - \bar{H}(\sigma_0 - \bar{\eta}) \right].$$
(D.0.2)

Here,  $\overline{H}(x)$  is a step function defined in Appendix B equation (B.0.7).

Procedure for obtaining  $N(\kappa^{-})$  is similar.

## **D.1** Properties of $N(\kappa^{\pm})$ terms

Here we will list some properties of  $N(\kappa^{\pm})$  function.

These functions can be combined in same way as  $\beta^\pm$  functions in order to get  $\tau$  and  $\sigma$  representations

$$N(\kappa^{+}) + N(\kappa^{-}) = N(\kappa^{0}),$$
 (D.1.1)

$$N(\kappa^{+}) - N(\kappa^{-}) = N(\kappa^{1}),$$
 (D.1.2)

### D.1. Properties of $N(\kappa^{\pm})$ terms

where  $\kappa^0$  and  $\kappa^1$  represent  $\tau$  and  $\sigma$  coordinates respectively

Acting with partial derivatives on  $N(\kappa^+)$   $(N(\kappa^-))$  and integrating over world-sheet we have following relations

$$\int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial_+ N(\kappa^+) = 1, \qquad \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial_- N(\kappa^+) = 0, \qquad (D.1.3)$$

$$\int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial_- N(\kappa^-) = 1, \qquad \int_{\Sigma} d^2 \xi \partial_+ N(\kappa^-) = 0.$$
(D.1.4)

These relationships can be checked directly by applying partial derivatives to expressions from D. Here we give explicit calculations to first of these relation

$$\int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \partial_{+} N(\kappa^{+}) = \int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \delta \Big( \xi'^{-} \big( (\xi'^{+})^{-1} (\kappa^{+}) \big) - \kappa^{-} \Big) \partial_{+} \big[ \bar{H}(\xi^{+} - \kappa^{+}) - \bar{H}(\xi^{+}_{0} - \kappa^{+}) \big]$$
  
= 
$$\int_{\Sigma} d^{2}\xi \delta \Big( \xi'^{-} \big( (\xi'^{+})^{-1} (\kappa^{+}) \big) - \kappa^{-} \Big) \delta(\xi^{+} - \kappa^{+}) = \int_{\Sigma} d\xi^{-} \delta \Big( \xi'^{-} \big( (\xi'^{+})^{-1} (\xi^{+}) \big) - \kappa^{-} \Big). \quad (D.1.5)$$

At the beginning of this Appendix we had following parametrisation of path P :  $\xi'^+(t_i) = \xi_0^+$ and  $\xi'^+(t_f) = \xi^+$ . Applying inverse parametrisation we have  $(\xi'^+)^{-1}(\xi_0^+) = t_i$  and  $(\xi'^+)^{-1}(\xi^+) = t_f$ . With these we have

$$\int_{\Sigma} d\xi^{-} \delta \left( \xi'^{-} \left( (\xi'^{+})^{-1} (\xi^{+}) \right) - \kappa^{-} \right) = \int_{\Sigma} d\xi^{-} \delta \left( \xi'^{-} (t_{f}) - \kappa^{-} \right)$$
$$= \int_{\Sigma} d\xi^{-} \delta \left( \xi^{-} - \kappa^{-} \right) = 1.$$
(D.1.6)

Same rules apply for  $N(\kappa^{-})$ ,  $N(\kappa^{0})$  and  $N(\kappa^{1})$ . In cases where  $F^{-1}(x)_{\alpha\beta}$  is antisymmetric we can transfer partial derivatives from  $\partial_{\pm}V^{\mu}$  to  $N(\kappa^{\pm})$  and obtain standard  $\beta^{\pm}$  functions.

## Biography

Danijel Obrić was born on November 27th, 1992 in Benkovac, Republic of Croatia. After graduating from Vršac's high school "Nikola Tesla" in 2011, he began his academic studies at the Faculty of Physics, University of Belgrade, under the study program for Theoretical and Experimental Physics. He graduated from this program in 2016 with an average grade of 8,16. That same year, he began his Master's studies at the Faculty of Physics. In 2017, he completed his Master's studies with an average grade of 10 and with thesis titled "Non-commutativity and non-associativity of closed bosonic string", under supervision of Prof. Dr. Bojan Nikolić.

Since 2018, he has been enrolled in the PhD program at the Faculty of Physics, and since 2019, he has been employed by Institute of Physics in the role of research trainee as part of the project ON171031 "Physical Implications of Modified Spacetime". In 2022, he obtained the title of research associate at the Institute of Physics and is currently working on the project IDEJE "Quantum Gravity from Higher Gauge Theory".

The research area of Danijel Obrić is string theory and its interplay with different aspects of non-commutative geometry. Currently, this area is one of the main topics of study in high energy theoretical physics.

### Изјава о ауторству

Име и презиме аутора Данијел Обрић

Број индекса \_\_\_\_\_\_ 8013/2018 \_\_\_\_\_

### Изјављујем

да је докторска дисертација под насловом

Т-дуализација бозонске струне и тип IIБ суперструне у присуству кооринатно зависних

позадинских поља

- резултат сопственог истраживачког рада;
- да дисертација у целини ни у деловима није била предложена за стицање друге дипломе према студијским програмима других високошколских установа;
- да су резултати коректно наведени и
- да нисам кршио/ла ауторска права и користио/ла интелектуалну својину других лица.

Потпис аутора

У Београду, <u>2023</u>

Odjut downjel

# Изјава о истоветности штампане и електронске верзије докторског рада

Име и презиме ауто	раДанијел Обрић	
Број индекса	8013/2018	
	Квантна поља, честице и грав	<u>витација</u> 5 суперструне у присуству кооринатно
Наслов рада <u>зависн</u>	их позадинских поља	
Ментор	Бојан Николић	

Изјављујем да је штампана верзија мог докторског рада истоветна електронској верзији коју сам предао/ла ради похрањивања у **Дигиталном репозиторијуму Универзитета у Београду.** 

Дозвољавам да се објаве моји лични подаци везани за добијање академског назива доктора наука, као што су име и презиме, година и место рођења и датум одбране рада.

Ови лични подаци могу се објавити на мрежним страницама дигиталне библиотеке, у електронском каталогу и у публикацијама Универзитета у Београду.

Потпис аутора

У Београду, \_\_\_\_\_2023\_\_\_\_\_

Odpet downight

### Изјава о коришћењу

Овлашћујем Универзитетску библиотеку "Светозар Марковић" да у Дигитални репозиторијум Универзитета у Београду унесе моју докторску дисертацију под насловом:

<u>Т-дуализација бозонске струне и тип IIБ суперструне у присуству кооринатно зависних</u>

позадинских поља

која је моје ауторско дело.

Дисертацију са свим прилозима предао/ла сам у електронском формату погодном за трајно архивирање.

Моју докторску дисертацију похрањену у Дигиталном репозиторијуму Универзитета у Београду и доступну у отвореном приступу могу да користе сви који поштују одредбе садржане у одабраном типу лиценце Креативне заједнице (Creative Commons) за коју сам се одлучио/ла.

Д Ауторство (СС ВУ)

- 2. Ауторство некомерцијално (СС ВУ-NС)
- 3. Ауторство некомерцијално без прерада (СС ВУ-NC-ND)
- 4. Ауторство некомерцијално делити под истим условима (СС ВУ-NC-SA)
- 5. Ауторство без прерада (СС ВУ-ND)
- 6. Ауторство делити под истим условима (СС ВУ-SA)

(Молимо да заокружите само једну од шест понуђених лиценци. Кратак опис лиценци је саставни део ове изјаве).

Потпис аутора

У Београду, \_\_\_\_\_ 2023\_\_\_\_\_

OSpit downjel

1. **Ауторство**. Дозвољавате умножавање, дистрибуцију и јавно саопштавање дела, и прераде, ако се наведе име аутора на начин одређен од стране аутора или даваоца лиценце, чак и у комерцијалне сврхе. Ово је најслободнија од свих лиценци.

2. **Ауторство – некомерцијално**. Дозвољавате умножавање, дистрибуцију и јавно саопштавање дела, и прераде, ако се наведе име аутора на начин одређен од стране аутора или даваоца лиценце. Ова лиценца не дозвољава комерцијалну употребу дела.

3. **Ауторство – некомерцијално – без прерада**. Дозвољавате умножавање, дистрибуцију и јавно саопштавање дела, без промена, преобликовања или употребе дела у свом делу, ако се наведе име аутора на начин одређен од стране аутора или даваоца лиценце. Ова лиценца не дозвољава комерцијалну употребу дела. У односу на све остале лиценце, овом лиценцом се ограничава највећи обим права коришћења дела.

4. **Ауторство – некомерцијално – делити под истим условима**. Дозвољавате умножавање, дистрибуцију и јавно саопштавање дела, и прераде, ако се наведе име аутора на начин одређен од стране аутора или даваоца лиценце и ако се прерада дистрибуира под истом или сличном лиценцом. Ова лиценца не дозвољава комерцијалну употребу дела и прерада.

5. **Ауторство – без прерада**. Дозвољавате умножавање, дистрибуцију и јавно саопштавање дела, без промена, преобликовања или употребе дела у свом делу, ако се наведе име аутора на начин одређен од стране аутора или даваоца лиценце. Ова лиценца дозвољава комерцијалну употребу дела.

6. **Ауторство – делити под истим условима**. Дозвољавате умножавање, дистрибуцију и јавно саопштавање дела, и прераде, ако се наведе име аутора на начин одређен од стране аутора или даваоца лиценце и ако се прерада дистрибуира под истом или сличном лиценцом. Ова лиценца дозвољава комерцијалну употребу дела и прерада. Слична је софтверским лиценцама, односно лиценцама отвореног кода.